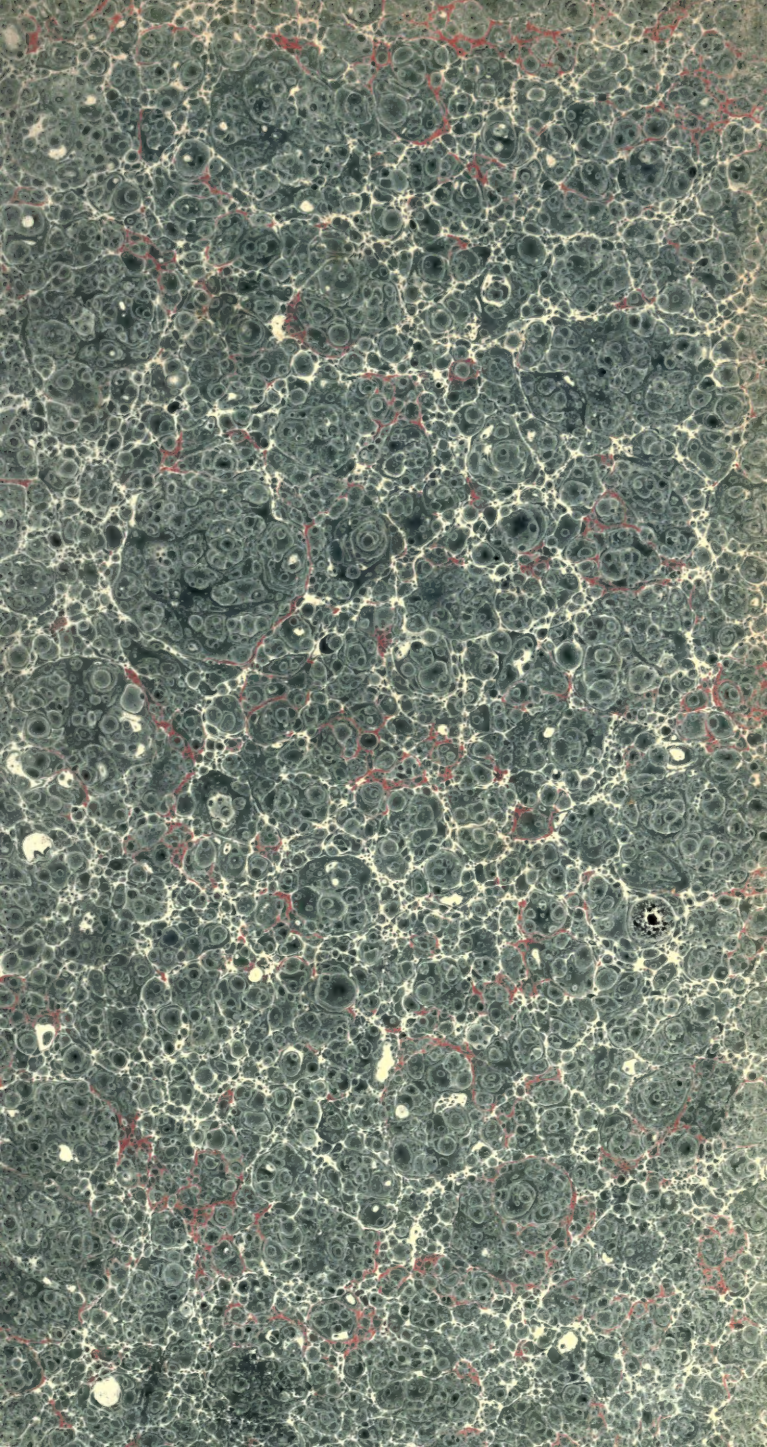






Ida H. Kinslip 09





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

THE HISTORY
OF THE
LIFE OF THE SQUIRE
MARCOS DE OBREGON,

INSCRIBED TO THE MOST ILLUSTRIOUS
CARDINAL ARCHBISHOP OF TOLEDO,
DON BERNARDO DE SANDOVAL AND ROJAS,

The Protector of Virtue and Father of the Poor,

BY VINCENT ESPINEL,

MASTER OF ARTS, AND CHAPLAIN OF OUR LORD THE KING, IN THE
ROYAL HOSPITAL OF THE CITY OF RONDA,

TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH,

FROM THE
MADRID EDITION OF 1618,

BY MAJOR ALGERNON LANGTON,
61st REGIMENT.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR JOHN BOOTH, DUKE STREET,
PORTLAND PLACE.

1816.

CONTENTS.

VOL. II.

PART SECOND.

BOOK II.

- The Squire's Wish to depart—Prevented by the
Hermit—A Conversation on Supernatural
Appearances, with an extraordinary Tale re-
lating thereto* 1

CHAP. I.

- The Squire's Reflections upon Prosing* 15

CHAP. II.

- Marcos arrives at Seville—His Adventures there* 17

CHAP. III.

- The Squire is extricated from a State of Jeopardy,
by the Assistance of Fire and Water* 23

CHAP. IV.

- The Squire indulges in Reflections on the last
Adventure* 32

CHAP. V.

- One Misfortune brings on another—The Persecu-
tion of the Squire continues* 38

CHAP. VI.

The Reader is introduced to some witty Natives of Portugal 54

CHAP. VII.

Marcos embarks at San Lucar—After encountering many Dangers, he arrives at Cabrera . . . 60

CHAP. VII.

The Squire makes a new Acquaintance, not quite to his Satisfaction—His new Friend persuades him to accompany him to Africa, instead of pursuing his Course towards Italy 72

CHAP. IX.

Marcos gives an Account of his Captivity, and relates certain Circumstances, which render it somewhat palatable 95

CHAP. X.

The Squire succeeds in charming away the young Lady's Melancholy—His Skill involves him in unpleasant Consequences—The Dexterity he employs to extricate himself 101

CHAP. XII.

Gives an Insight into the Manners and Customs of the Moors 125

CHAP. XIII.

*An atrocious Robbery ; and the singular Means
employed to detect the Perpetrator 140*

CHAP. XIII.

*The Squire regains his Liberty—An Account of
his Voyage. 151*

CHAP. XIV.

*Treated as a Renegado Captain, but shortly fol-
lowed by a happy Reverse 173*

PART THIRD.

BOOK III.

*Containing the Squire's Adventure on the Road
towards Milan 183*

CHAP. I.

*An unfortunate Accident, attended by serious
Consequences 191*

CHAP. II.

*Marcos, to regain his Liberty, puts in practice a
clever Stratagem 202*

CHAP. III.

More surprising Adventures 208

CHAP. IV.

*The Squire falls in with a Necromancer, but
proves himself the more cunning of the two . . . 220*

CHAP. V.

*Containing a Discourse on Musick, and the Com-
mencement of a most marvellous Adventure . . . 231*

CHAP. VI.

The marvellous Tale continued 240

CHAP. VII.

The Squire witnesses a most tragical Event . . . 254

CHAP. VIII.

*Conclusion of the marvellous Story—The Squire
arrives at Venice, and is kindly received by the
Lady Camilla 276*

CHAP. IX.

*The Lady Camilla leaves Marcos in the Lurch,
but is afterwards herself outwitted 287*

CHAP. X.

*Mighty curious Adventures that befall the Squire
during his Voyage 293*

CHAP. X.

The Squire enters into the Service of a great Man 311

CHAP. XII.

Marcos, by an unfortunate Concurrence of Events, removes from a Palace to a Dungeon—Interior View of his Abode 319

CHAP. XIII.

How Marcos was consoled for his long Imprisonment 334

CHAP. XIV.

The Squire leaves Madrid for Andalucia—Travelling Anecdotes—A Disquisition on Artificial Memory 342

CHAP. XV.

Sprightly Conversation on the Road—A young Wit introduced to the Reader 360

CHAP. XVI.

Marcos takes Leave of his new Friend, and meets with some old Acquaintances 379

CHAP. XVII.

The Squire's bad Luck pursues, or rather keeps pace with him 395

CHAP. XVIII.

The Squire falls into the Hands of Robbers . . . 404

CHAP. XIX.

Dr. Sagredo relates his wonderful Adventures . . . 412

CHAP. XX.

The Doctor continues his Narrative 420

CHAP. XXI.

The Doctor's Narrative continued 431

CHAP. XXII.

*How the Doctor was interrupted—He proceeds in
his Story* 439

CHAP. XXIII.

Conclusion of Dr. Sagredo's Narrative . . . 456

CHAP. XXIV.

*A Page interrogated—The Robbers pass Judge-
ment on the Captives* 465

CHAP. XXV.

The Squire leaves the Hermitage 482

CHAPTER THE LAST, AND EPILOGUE.

*The Squire, in Conclusion, moralizes on his past
Life* 486

HISTORY
OF THE
SQUIRE MARCOS DE OBREGON.

PART SECOND.

BOOK II.

The Squire's wish to depart—Prevented by the Hermit—A Conversation on supernatural Appearances, with an extraordinary Tale relating thereto.

ALTHOUGH the Violence of the Rain, which had beaten furiously against the Hermitage all Night, had subsided by Break of Day, the River continued so much swoln that it overflowed the Bridge, and rendered it impassable on either Side until the next Day, when it became fordable. I was willing, however, to take my Leave, as it appeared to me that the Hermit was already tired of hearing these Adventures of mine; and as I am not naturally inclined to talk,

or listen much to others, I concluded that the Hermit's great Inclination to sleep, proceeded from the Fatigue of attending to my Story. And as great Talkers (a Set of People who never think on what is to follow) are so odious to me, I did not choose to imitate the Failing I condemned. For those that possess this Superfluity of Speech; of Words without Substance; are generally Braggarts, Flatterers, Tale-bearers, and Liars; who, rather than not talk, say any Thing that comes uppermost, without considering whether it be true or false, or knowing how to distinguish Falsehood from Truth; and with the same Readiness with which they assert a Fact, they unsay it again; eager to confirm every idle Story, and advance their own Opinion; and thus covering one Error with a thousand others. Wishing then to avoid the Character of a great Talker, I was desirous to take my Leave of the Hermit, even though the Wea-

ther should not serve for my Return: but he insisted on my not leaving him alone, by reason of a deep Melancholy which a Dream of the preceding Night had occasioned him; and, to strengthen his Arguments, he told it me. “That being more awake than asleep, a dead Man had appeared to him, in whose Death he was concerned in Italy.” I laughed, and said all I could to drive away such a Fancy from his Imagination. He asked me, why I laughed? “I laugh,” said I, “at the Apprehensions of some Persons; for the Effect of Dreams on them is so powerful, that it appears to them that every Thing they dream must be true; an Idea which is so much reprobated by God himself in many Parts of the Old Testament, and equally in the New—being all Vapour of the Brain, and, in the present Instance Melancholy, which has been caused by the Roughness of the Weather, together with the small Quantity and bad Quality of

what you have eaten, which is enough to produce this, and more ridiculous Effects.” “ I say,” exclaimed the Hermit, “ that I see him at this Moment before me.” I laughed much more now than before,—and he said: “ Do you maintain that the Dead never come now to converse with the Living?” “ Certainly not,” replied I, “ except when upon some Affair of great Importance, God gives them Leave to do so, as in that wonderful Instance, worthy of being known, which happened to the Marques de las Navas, who conversed with a dead Man, the Life of whom he had taken: but he came to tell him of Circumstances which concerned the Quiet and Repose of his Soul. There is no Instance that we read of in ancient Writings which has so great an Appearance of Truth as this, (not alluding of course to those recorded in Holy Scripture,) because it happened in our own Times, and to so great a Friend to Truth as

this Nobleman, and in Presence of Witnesses, of whom some are now living; though neither he nor they can derive any Advantage from the Truth of it being established.” “To which Marquess did it happen?” said the Hermit. “To the present,” said I, “Don Pedro de Avila.” “If it will not fatigue you,” said the Hermit, “or even though it should, let me intreat you to tell me what passed on that Occasion; for every Body ought to be acquainted with so extraordinary an Occurrence, which has happened too in our own Times.” “It is indeed well known to many at present,” said I; “but lest it should remain in the Sepulchre with the dead Man, it is better to tell it, and to make a particular Record of a Fact which has so much the Appearance of Truth; nor would I vouch for it, if I had not heard it from the Lips of so great a Nobleman as the Marquess himself, and his Brother, Don Enrique de Guzman,

Marquess of Povar, Gentleman of the Bed-chamber to the most potent Monarch, Philip the Third of Spain, in whose Palace Flattery and Lies had no Asylum. The Matter happened thus:—The Marquess being a Prisoner, by Order of his King, in St. Martin's, (a Monastery of the Order of Saint Benito, in Madrid,) his Friends and other great Noblemen who went to visit him, remained with him generally all Night, particularly Don Enrique his Brother, and Don Felipe de Cordova, Son of Don Diego de Cordova, Chief Master of the Horse to Philip the Second; and one Night, among many others, the Marquess and Don Felipe felt inclined to take a Walk; they went towards the Parish of Lavapies, and as they stood talking near a Window, the Marquess said: 'Pray wait for me here, I am going up that Street, and will return to you in a few Minutes.' The Street was narrow, and he found two Men at the Corners of it, who

prevented him from passing. The Marquess said : ‘ You must see, Gentlemen, that I wish to go this Way ;’ and then attempted to push by them against their Will. One of the Men made a Thrust at him with his Sword ; and the Marquess doing the same to him at the same Moment, each thought he had killed his Adversary : but the Marquess, in the Act of drawing his Sword out of his Bosom, gave the second Fellow a Blow, which laid his Head open. Thus the two lay on the Ground without the Power of moving ; the one dead, and the other senseless from the Wound in his Head. The Marquess went back and found Don Felipe, and they returned together to Saint Martin’s. When they arrived there, it appeared to him that it would be wrong to go to sleep without ascertaining what had been the Extent of the Mischief done ; he therefore mentioned to his two Friends what had happened, and they both resolved to go.

The Marquess, who did not wish they should go without him, set out with them; and they found the People of the Parish in a State of Alarm, telling them, when they came up, that two Men had been just murdered. They returned, without finding any Thing on the fatal Spot, (by which they had passed,) except two Handkerchiefs stained with Blood. He who had been wounded in the Head, went to Toledo, and from thence sent to inquire whether the Marquess was dead, (for he knew who it was when he gave him the Wound,) and, though he did what he could to cure himself, he notwithstanding died of the Wound. He had previously made a Will; and being aware that the Marquess had received no Injury, (the Sword of his Opponent having glanced off,) he made him his Executor. The Marquess was informed of this Circumstance by a Priest, who came purposely to communicate it to him. Within five or six Days after the

Death of this Man, the Marquess having gone to Bed, Don Enrique his Brother, and Don Felipe de Cordova being in another Bed in the same Apartment, with the Door fast, some one came to the Marquess's Bed and pulled the Clothes off him. The Marquess said: 'Get away, Don Enrique!' A deep Voice full of Horrour replied: 'It is not Don Henrique!' The Marquess being alarmed, jumped out of Bed, and drawing his Sword, which was at the Bed-head, he made so many Cuts with it, that Don Felipe asked what was the Matter? 'It is the Marquess my Brother,' said Don Enrique, 'who is running about the Room, fighting with a dead Man!' He continued cutting and slashing away till he was tired, without encountering any Object, except occasionally the Walls. He then opened the Door, and looked round, continuing to lay about him as furiously as ever with his Sword, until he arrived at a Corner where it was quite

dark, and then the Shade said to him :
 ‘ Enough of this, my Lord Marquess ; now
 come with me, for I have something to tell
 you.’ The Marquess followed him, and the
 other two Noblemen, his Brother and Don
 Felipe, kept close behind him. He led down
 the Stairs, and the Marquess asking what
 more he required? he replied, that he must
 order his Companions to leave him, for that
 he could not speak before Witnesses. He,
 though very reluctantly, desired them to
 remain where they were ; but they did not
 choose to do so. At last the Shade went
 into a Vault, where there were dead Men’s
 Bones : the Marquess entered after him, and
 in treading on the Bones, he felt so much
 Alarm, that he found it necessary to go out
 to recover his Breath and conquer his Ter-
 ror ; and this he did three different Times.
 What the Shade required, (as well as the
 Fears of the Marquess would allow him to
 understand it,) was, that in Return for the

Death he had given him, he would do him the Favour to comply with the Terms of the Will he had left, which was to put his Daughter in Possession of the Property. According to the Witnesses, there now passed mutual Promises between the Marquess and the Shade; and the Marquess confesses that having been formerly as handsome in the Face, his Complexion tinged with red and white like his Brother's, from that Night he has remained constantly, as he is now, without any Colour, and his Countenance quite pale and altered. He says that he appeared to him at other Times, and that before he saw him, such a cold Shivering came over him, that he could not support himself: at length when he had complied with his Will, he appeared no more. Whether this was his own Spirit, or that of his Guardian Angel, or a good or bad Angel, is a Matter of Dispute among Theologians; but for me it suffices that I

have heard it from the Mouth of so great a Nobleman as the Marquess himself, and from Don Enrique his Brother, to consider the Fact established; and that for Events so important as those which concern the Salvation of a Soul, the Lord of Heaven and Earth is wont to permit these strange Events sometimes to happen. For these are not of the same Kind as those related by certain Pagan Authors, of calling for Souls to put Questions to them; as Empedocles did, and Appion the Rhetorician, who called up the Shade of Homer, and did not dare to tell what Answers it had given him: but these were Arts of Necromancy, of which Cicero says, that they pretended to produce the Bodies of those who had long been burnt, and gave them some Form or Figure; for the Spirit of itself was incapable of being seen. But all these were Arts of the Devil, who, being powerful, assisted them in what they asked

of him, God permitting it; for without *His* Permission, he would not have been able to do any Thing. And as to the Returning of the Souls of those who are dead, by the Dispensation of God, no one can deny that such Things have happened: not that they go wandering about the World; for their Abiding-place is pointed out, either in Heaven, or in Hell, or in Purgatory. And if I have been prolix in this Narrative, *contrary to my natural Disposition and Style*, it is because Incidents of so serious a Nature ought to be told with that Simplicity and Smoothness with which they occurred, neither ornamenting nor mutilating the Narration.” “This Story,” exclaimed the Hermit, has excited my Astonishment, and I am resolved to quit a Life of Solitude; for, although I have passed some Time here, I have seen nothing to disturb me; and yet, in spite of all this, I have retired from Solitude towards an inhabited Part, on account

of the Fears I experienced among the craggy Mountains of the Sierra Morena. But let us leave this Subject, and return to that with which we set out; for with the Sweetness of your Style, and your Grace in recounting it, I shall forget the Melancholy occasioned by the Dream, and by the Circumstance which you have now related.” The Hermit went soon after to Seville, where he now lives very retired.

CHAP. I.

The Squire's Reflections upon Prosing.

WITH the View of resuming the Thread of our Discourse, we seated ourselves round the Braserо,* and I continued my History: for the Hermit was a Man of good Information, and importuned me so much, that it was obvious he took Pleasure in hearing the Adventures of my Life; and as he shewed great Attention, (which always animates the Speaker,) I began where I had left off the preceding Night, on account of his Drowsiness. But before I began, I fell into these Reflections:—that the Reward of a good Speaker is the Attention that is paid to him; and though his Discourse should not be very interesting, it shews great Want of

* An open Brass Pan, in which they burn Charcoal, Almond-shells, &c. *Tr.*

Politeness not to applaud what he says ; because, at all Events, he does what he can to make it agreeable, and talks as well as his Powers and Knowledge enable him : for I maintain that he who speaks, ought to be careful of what he says, and withal so prudent as not to employ a Surperfluity of Words, nor to wander from the Subject ; nor should he try to engross the whole of the Conversation to himself, but allow Time for the Observations of others. When I was relating the Adventures of my Life, it never occurred to me that the Hermit could be fatigued with listening to my diffuse Talk : but it happened well for me, not only that he was not fatigued, but that he importuned me to go on with my Narrative. I continued therefore as follows :

CHAP. II.

Marcos arrives at Seville—His Adventures there.

AS soon (either in consequence of the Prognostication of that Comet, or from whatever other Cause, GOD, who knows best, was pleased to ordain) as Don Sebastian, King of Portugal, was killed in that memorable Battle, in which three Kings were present, and all of them died gloriously; the Cardinal Don Enrique, Uncle to Philip the Second, was called to the Crown of that Kingdom. The whole of Castile and Andalucia rose to serve their King, with that Love and Obedience which Spain has always had for its legitimate Sovereigns. I went from Valladolid to Madrid; and in conformity to my Love of Variety, and the Opinion of others, pursued my Journey to Seville, intending to go to Italy, since I should not arrive in time

to embark for Africa. While I remained at Seville, I was much occupied in admiring the Grandeur of that famous City, full of a thousand Excellencies; the Treasury and Distributor of the immense Wealth poured into her Ports by the vast Atlantic, besides that which she leaves for herself, concealed for ever in her deep Sands.

The Affairs of Portugal having become tranquil, or rather being reduced to a better State, I remained some Time in Seville; where, among many other Accidents that befell me, one was, to give into that Sort of bravado Valour which was then common. And I believe there is, at this Day, a Kind of Gentry who neither appear like Christians, Moors, or Pagans, unless their Religion is, to adore the Goddess of Valour, because it appears to them, that if they belong to that Fraternity, they will be considered and respected as valorous:—not that they are so; it is enough for them that they seem

so. It happened to me that as I was passing along the Street of Genoa, I fell in with one of these valiant Gentlemen, and met him in such a Situation, that my passing in the clean Part of the Road obliged him to go into the Dirt. He turned round to me, and said haughtily: "Pray, Sir, don't you see what you are doing?" I said to him, "Pardon me, Sir, I did not do it on purpose." "If you had," retorted he, "you would not have a Moment to live." I happened then not to wear a Sword, being in the Dress of a Student, (a Situation I have always esteemed,) and consequently I behaved with all Humility, and he with all the Arrogance of one of his Class. I told him, that I did not consider the Offence to have been so great, as to merit so severe a Chastisement. He then said to me: "It appears that you are not aware to whom you are speaking. But make your Mind easy; I do not intend to

punish you further than by thrusting forty Fingers into your Face," (which, according to my Calculation, amounted to eight Blows with his Fist). I waited quietly where I was, and when he came towards me, with his Hands raised, to put his Threat in execution, I made use of a Stratagem which has always stood me in very good Stead; it was simply this: as he came up intent on his Purpose, I seized his Sword by the Guard with the utmost Quickness, and drawing it from the Scabbard with the same Motion, I put my five Fingers into his Face, and gave him a smart Blow on the Left Cheek.

Finding himself unarmed, he began running with all his Might, whilst certain Leather-dressers who were standing by, and saw what passed, cried out, "Victory! victory to the Scholar!" but they added, to me: "Get you hence with all Speed, for he is gone

to seek his Comrades, and they will soon return together. I went off towards St. Francisco, while the valiant Gentleman entered the Orange Court,* pale and swordless ; his Cloak torn and his Face covered with Blood. They asked him what all this meant? Whereupon he told them, that about thirty Fellows had surrounded him, and closing with him, had taken away his Sword ; and, after wounding him, had managed to escape, but not before he had taken off one of their Noses at a Stroke. He added that he was now in search of another Sword and Shield, with which he would make Minced-meat of them all.

They repaired to the Spot where the Affair had happened, and there every one spoke in my Favour. Among the rest, a Man of less than middling Stature, deaf, and crook-backed, to whom all the others

* A Court of the Cathedral, still so called. *Tr.*

seemed to pay Respect, said to them: “ This young Man has behaved very well, and I have no doubt but he is a Lad of Mettle. Therefore you must be Friends with him, as the Person who tells us he has received this Injury, is already one of the Fraternity of Brave Fellows; and in two Hours time I do not doubt but these two will be very good Friends.”

Some Officers then persuaded me to go with them to my Opponent; telling him that if he desired to be Friends with me, he must take us all to the Tavern of Pinto, and treat us to a Glass of good Wine of Cazalla. The rest then shouted with one Voice: “ He is a fine Lad, and worthy of being admitted into the Fraternity of Brave Fellows!”

CHAP. III.

The Squire is extricated from a State of Jeopardy, by the Assistance of Fire and Water.

THIS being over, as the Rascal was still dissatisfied, he sought some Scheme by which to revenge himself on me; and soon found one well adapted to his Purpose.

As I was a New-comer, and possessed but little Experience in the Ways of Seville, I acted with no great Prudence, though it is necessary to enter with much Caution into such large Societies as these. And he who has no Knowledge or Experience of his own, ought to avail himself of what is possessed by others, that he may avoid exposing himself to frequent Danger.

I gave into the Fashion of wearing a Sword, and exposed myself to all that is

expected of those who carry them. And what with my newly-acquired Valour, and having been something of a Poet and a Musician, (or indeed any one of the three would have been sufficient to affect a wiser Head than mine), I began to shew off my Courage more than was becoming, and to adopt the Style of a Gallant or Tavern-bully, and to fall in Love with all the Women I met; so that no Portuguese could have been more courtly than I was. My Enemy discovered my Weakness in falling in Love with a Lady of good Figure, in whose House he acted as absolute Master. Walking one Day amongst the Trees of the Alameda, I perceived a Woman beckon to me, and going towards her, she said: "Is it possible then, Sir, that you observe so little, as not to take notice when People look at you with more than common Attention?" I examined her Face and Figure; and although I found them perfectly

good, yet I believed her; for I was so full of Vanity, that on this Score, I should have credited any Compliment made me. She continued saying: “The time is come when I no longer regard the Restraints of a Husband, whilst I look upon you. Oh! Ill betide the Eyes which lose their Prudence, and the Feet which quit the Threshold of their own House, to enter the Door of Strangers! How do I know but that I may give up my Liberty to one who does not know how to value it! how shall I look at a Man who does not know me, and with whom I am not acquainted! and what Request am I about to make—I, that have never in my Life admitted the Requests of any one! Yet I would rather die than not claim the Affections of one, who perhaps will laugh at me, and despise my Charms!” And then she pretended to drop some Tears—so tender, that they deprived me of the small Remainder of my Reason. Thus having completed her Stratagem, she

left me, turning away with much Grace and Elegance. I remained petrified and confounded at the Suddenness of her Departure, as well as at the Words she had uttered to subdue my Heart. Whilst her Attendant said to me: “I hope you are pleased with my Mistress, for you have been the Cause of her Melancholy, from which springs all her Ill-humour; that scarcely any Body in the House can put up with it. Follow her, Sir, if you please; but be very careful that her Husband does not see you, for he is a Gentleman of high Rank, and not a little jealous, though he has never seen the slightest Occasion for it in the Conduct of my Mistress.” I followed her with Astonishment, but very well satisfied at appearing to merit so much Favour; holding myself in higher Estimation than there was any Ground for. I went into her House, which was in a narrow Street leading out of the Calle de las Armas; and she immediately evinced her

favourable Inclination towards me, seating herself near the Window,* and giving me Notice that I need be under no Restraint, for she would let me know what was to be done.

I went on courting her for some Days, as she wished to make it appear that on account of her Quality, she did not choose to yield at once to my Entreaties. Oh! Deceits of the World! how easily does a Man credit those Things which correspond with his Wishes or Advantage! If we were to observe and deliberate as much on those Things which appear for our Advantage, as on those that have a contrary Appearance, we should not fall into so many Dangers and Misfortunes as now commonly happen to us. As it proved in my Case; when trusting implicitly in this Woman, I soon found myself

* ‘Haziendo Ventara’ is a Phrase in Spanish, signifying that a Woman who looks out for Admiration takes pains, —*places herself in the best Light* to be seen. Tr.

in a most perilous State. But who would not be deceived by a handsome Face, fine Figure, smooth Words, and sparkling Eyes? In short, I persevered, till she sent me a most affectionate Note, desiring me to visit her that Night. I made myself as smart as possible; carried my Sword and a large Lantern (big enough for a Shield), and went straight to her House, without thinking of any Thing but the Gratification of my Desires.

I found the Door and her Arms open to receive me; and in truth, the Reception she gave me was as affectionate as I could wish. She shut the Door, and immediately some one called her. Without inquiring who it was, she said: "My Friend, that is my Husband calling me; get into this little Cellar, for he will soon go out again. I went in, as she desired, taking my Lantern with me. She locked the Door of the Cellar, and left me a complete Prisoner. The Place

was almost full of dried Reeds and Branches of Vines ; there was a Well in it,* which communicated with the upper Part of the House, and had a Bucket hanging to it. I set myself to listen to what they said, for the locking of the Door made me suspicious. The Lady said to her pretended Husband : “ Well, now that I have got this Man locked up, what shall we do with him ? ” He replied, in a low Tone of Voice, which I could discover, however, to be that of my Enemy : “ Let us burn him, or drown him in this Well ; for he is the Rascal that drew my Sword out of the Scabbard.” A Scheme presently suggested itself to me, by which I could extricate myself from their Snares ; for Danger, that Discoverer of great Secrets, and the Fear of Death, raise Thoughts in one’s Imagination, which otherwise never could have entered it. I stopped up the

* A Well of this Sort is not uncommon in Spanish Houses. *Tr.*

Mouth of the Well with a Board, and made up a Heap close to the Door, of the dried Vines and Reeds; then with the Light of the Lantern, which I had not yet extinguished, set fire to it. The Door was so dry that it began to burn directly, with the Assistance of the other Materials, many of the Flames issuing out from below it. I got into the Bucket of the Well, holding fast by the Rope; for the Mouth of the Well being stopped, I was not in any Danger. The People all began crying out: “Fire, Fire! Water!* to the Well for Water!” They immediately began pulling at the Rope, to draw up the Water; and as my Weight made it too heavy, several of their Neighbours were called to assist, and after hauling for some Time with great Violence, they at last drew me up. I seized fast hold of the Boards at the Top of the Well, and, as I naturally

A separate Family in another Story. *Tr.*

looked ghastly from Terror, what with this Appearance, and some horrible Faces that I made, the People were all alarmed, exclaiming that they had drawn up the Devil from the Well. As soon as I had got clear of the Bucket, I slipped away among the Crowd as well as I could ; (indeed they were too full of their Fears to notice me); and leaving them to their burning House, I escaped with my Person free; happy in the extreme to find my Life, where it was so nearly lost, as in a Well, and shut up in so confined a Place, as a small Cellar full of Reeds and Rubbish.

CHAP. IV.

The Squire indulges in Reflections on the last Adventure.

MY Enemy, for his Instrument of Revenge, availed himself of a handsome Woman; for these have all the natural Gift of moving Hearts with deceitful Tears. As they were born to weep, they know how to excite Tenderness in others. But God prevents the wicked Inventions of the more depraved Sort from taking Effect; and when they find they cannot attain their Object by Force, they set about it with Cunning and Deceit. They possess so much Power to say whatever they wish, and we so much Weakness in believing them, that it would seem as though we had come into the World for no other Purpose. Having extricated myself from this Danger, I fell into the Clutches of

an Alguazil, who came up on hearing the Noise, and, observing me run, seized hold of me. I said to him with great Presence of Mind: “What are you about? would you have us both fall into the Hands of the Dæmon they have discovered in that House? Fly to some Place of Safety: for he is murdering every one that goes near him.” This had the desired Effect; he let me instantly go, and took to his Heels likewise. For, having before heard some Rumour about the Dæmon in the Well, on my mentioning it again, he was convinced of the Truth of the Story. I never rested till I reached a Resting-place, under the Shadow of my two Friends, Hercules and Cæsar, whose Images stand on two high Columns at the Entrance of the Alameda;* having been placed there by that great Gentleman Don Francisco Za-

* They are still standing in the same Spot. *Tr.*

pata, Count of Barajas, who did so many eminent Things in Seville. But my Adventures of this Night were not yet over; for while I was resting myself there, I heard a very loud Noise at the Back of the Street of Garvancera, in a Place full of Mallows, which grow very high there. The Plants were moving about, without my being able to discover what it was that agitated them; and it being now late at Night, and the Place dreary and solitary, I did not feel quite comfortable. But going near the Spot with my drawn Sword, I saw nothing but the Motion of the Mallows, and heard a Noise among some Stones that were there. Presently an Adder and a Cat rushed out, fighting together; the Adder endeavouring to wind himself round the Cat's Body, and the Cat sitting up on her hind Legs, and wounding him between the Scales with her Claws.

This Battle lasted for some Time ; but the Adder not being able to resist the Talons of the Cat, returned to hide himself again amongst the Mallows ; and the Cat being nimble, by means of a Spring, got before him ; and, at the same Time taking a good Bite at the Adder's Head, retired before he could follow her ; which he would have done if she had not got away so fast. For, in making the Attempt, he struck that Part of his Back, in which lay all his Strength, against some Stones, which prevented his moving further ; and the Cat attacking him again, completed his Destruction.

I began contemplating the Dexterity of the Cat, observing how certain she was of inflicting her Wound ; more so than any other Animal. For which Reason, I was ever after fond of Cats, having till then greatly disliked them. For, though they have not so much Sense, nor so much Affection as Dogs, they prove a great Security

against the Reptiles that we find in our Houses.

I went to rest that Night, astonished and ashamed of the Deceit which that Sweet-heart of mine had employed so successfully against me. It must have proceeded from the Devil, though certainly not from him that came out of the Well: for that the Meekness exhibited in the Countenance of so handsome a Woman, should otherwise be capable of so vile a Cheat, and that she should give herself up so readily to the Advice of a Villain, is a Thing I cannot bring myself to credit. There is nothing ignoble in a Man suffering himself to be overcome by the Tears of a Woman; but for her to feign these Tears for a bad Purpose, appears an Abomination. To be vanquished by Beauty is natural; but for Beauty to yield to Deceit, is contrary to Reason and even to Nature. And that the Mind of a Man who has Courage to face a whole Army, should

let tiself be conquered by a Woman, who runs away at the Sight of a Mouse, is a most astonishing Thing! God preserve me from their Allurements, and guard me from their treacherous Ways; for these they commonly have, even when void of Passion.

CHAP. V.

One Misfortune brings on another—The Persecution of the Squire continues.

I WAS not in so much Security after what had passed, as not to find it necessary to live with great Circumspection for fear of the Tricks of the aforesaid *valiant Gentleman*: for if he was vexed before at my depriving him of his Laurel, his Revenge must have been increased by my Escape from the Danger he had meditated against me, and for which he had himself paid so dear. In order to render my Life more secure, I availed myself of the Protection afforded me in the House of a great Nobleman adjoining the Church of All Saints, in the Market Place; for in all my Difficulties

and Misfortunes, it ever proved an Asylum and House of Refuge for me.

The *valiant Gentleman* sent me a Challenge by as *valiant* a Friend of his. Being in the above House, of the Marques del Algarva, Don Luis de Guzman, at the Time this Message was delivered to me, his Servants, who were numerous, very respectable, and my Friends, would not allow me to accept the Challenge; and on account of the Want of Politeness in him who brought it, by thus shewing his Disrespect to the House, they sent him back to his own without a Nose; giving his Sword, Shield, and Dagger, for a Luncheon, to the Scullions of the Kitchen.

His Employer laid his Plans so well, (bad Fortune attend him!) that an Alcalde of Justice, a great Enemy of mine, (God knows whether he was deceived or not,) got Information that I had set fire to his Mistress's House, because, on account of a

little Jealousy, he had shut me up for a few Moments. Though I had always endeavoured to vanquish him with Politeness, and remove from him all Grounds for that Revenge which he carried in his Bosom ; as his Mind was far from noble, the Kindness of Behaviour and Humility I exercised towards him, made no Impression : for low-minded Persons, availing themselves of a favourable Opportunity, endeavour to revenge themselves on their Adversary in any Way they can, without reflecting whether the Means they adopt be good or bad. But Men of noble Minds, having Vengeance in their Hands, consider it much greater not to use it. This Judge of whom I am speaking, finding that he could indulge his cruel Inclination to injure me by means of the Information my Enemy had given him, immediately began to put his bad Designs in Execution, setting a Catch-poll and Spy to follow my Steps wherever I

went. I soon came to the Knowledge of this through some Friends of his and of mine : for it was well known that the Alcalde had set me down as criminal in his own Mind, deciding that I was an Incendiary, (as if he had possessed only one Ear, and that had been infected,) and giving out that he would not listen to any Thing that could be said in my Favour. He declared that he would drag me out of the Church, in whatever Part he should find me, the Crime of an Incendiary being of so serious a Nature.

Justino de Chaves, who now holds the same Office, would not have acted thus ; for he is a most upright Judge ; a Christian, and discreet withal, and of great Consideration in all he says and does ; not precipitate or blind in his Determinations ; but very temperate and humane in all his Actions. There are some Judges (though, I trust, but

few) who do not choose to leave a Crime to be judged by the Tribunal of God; but it rather appears as if the Devil made choice of them, in order to execute by their Hands what he cannot do with his own, when they are prevented acting by God.

When I knew that this Judge intended to treat me so tyrannically, I changed my Clothes for a bad old Suit, in which I disguised myself, and kept a Spy about his Person, to give me Notice of every Thing that passed; for I never moved from the Church of All Saints, the Sexton of which was a Friend of mine; and with him I had agreed what we were to do, if they went thither to seize me. The Spy came to give me Notice of their Intention of putting their Threat in Execution, and that for this Enterprize he was to bring with him a noted Toledan Bully. I swore that the Laugh should go against him, for that he should

carry me on his Shoulders* to my House. He appeared almost immediately after, and came towards the Church with so much Haste, that I had hardly Time to put my Scheme in Execution. I gave the Sexton my Cloak, my Clothes, and my Sword, remaining in an old dirty Doublet; and, tying a ragged, bloody Handkerchief round my Head, threw myself down among some poor filthy People, who were begging Alms at the Church Door. They came with great Fury to drag me out of the Church; but the Sexton shut the Door before they arrived, swearing (truly) that there was neither Refugee there, nor any one else, except those poor People, who made so much Noise, that nobody could hear Mass; and if they desired to carry off any Person who had fled hither for Refuge, he would deliver him

* There is a Play on the Words here, in the Spanish, "Llevar à costas," signifying, to carry *at one's Cost*, or on one's Shoulders. *Tr.*

into their Hands, and send these poor Beggars away. He then began driving them away, exclaiming: "Some of you People must be Delinquents." And as to me, the Sexton said that I was a Cripple, and unable to move alone; and, whispering the Catchpole that I was rich, and would reward him for his Trouble, he advised him to carry me Home. This was sufficient to excite his Avarice. While his Master was searching about among the Altars, and the Choir, and the Mats of the Sacristy, I said to him: "I am really very glad that you did not go in there, for that Man whom they are gone in search of, has sworn to kill you, though aware that you are a fine stout Fellow; but he is such a Devil of a Fellow, that he has now two Catchpoles in Pickle, and he would serve you in the same Way if he could get hold of you." "I am better off here then," said he. I replied, "Come, let us make Haste, before the Lieutenant sends

for you." And he took the Hint ; for these People, either because they gain nothing by it, or because they wish to preserve their Lives, in general avoid this sort of Dangers. The Alcalde, as he did not find the Prey he was in search of, and the Sexton had told him that he would give himself up quietly, did not call the Catchpole ; who took me up, and carried me all through the Alameda and the Parish of the Duke, as far as the Street of St. Eloy, where my Lodging was situated ; for I encouraged him as we went along, reminding him that besides his being well paid for his Trouble, he was performing a great Act of Charity. Two Acquaintances of mine followed close behind us, laughing heartily. He did not dare to ask them why they laughed, until we arrived at a Place where he thought there was no further Danger ; and then he said : " Pray, Gentlemen, what are you laughing at ? " They replied with a Smile : " Only at the Burthen

that you are carrying ; for that is the same Man whom you went to drag out of the Church." In the utmost Astonishment he let me fall on the Ground, and I, looking him in the Face, said : " What, did the Rogue expect to rob me of my Money ? let him thank me for not letting out his Tripes, whilst he was carrying me on his Shoulders like a St. Christopher."

While this was going on, the Judge was abusing the Sexton, for not having given me up to him. The Sexton replied, that he had fulfilled his Promise, in giving me over to the Catchpole, who had carried me off on his Back. The By-standers laughed so heartily at the Trick played the Catchpole, who was very famous in his Art, that the Judge lost the Anger which the Cheat had excited, especially when he found what had befallen his Assistant ; who, from Shame of the Adventure, held his Peace on the Subject ever after.

I have related this Anecdote, that the Ministers of Justice may understand that every Thing will not happen precisely as they wish; neither should all Delinquents fall into their Hands, and be punished on a mere Accusation, as is sometimes the Case at Seville: nor, on the other Hand, should the accused Person attempt *Resistance*, which, if once successful, will probably fail thirty Times. Judges should never lose their Respect for Places of publick Worship, lest it should happen to them as it does to the Dogs, who go about seeking for Food, and, though they frequently find something to eat, come one Time or other to be shut up between the two Doors. A Judge ought to proceed with Criminals in such a Manner, that it may not appear as if Justice and Vengeance went hand in hand; but he should do all in his Power to learn the Truth, by hearing both Parties, not considering the Accused guilty, because the

Accuser tells him he is so. A passionate Judge should by no means allow his Passion to prevail in a Cause in which he is interested ; for Passion makes the Offences of one's Adversary appear greater than they are. As it is a most difficult Matter to consider those bad who please us, so it is impossible to consider him good whom we dislike ; and *he* will be but ill able to protect the Authority of the Laws, who is the first to break them himself.

That Judge must be ashamed of his Conduct, against whose Sentence an Appeal is made, because it was pronounced with Prejudice. Offenders ought to make use of all Means, human and divine, rather than resist the Law ; and he who makes Resistance on the Ground of being in Favour, deserves to lose the Favour when he most needs it, as it frequently happens. There can be no other sufficient Cause but that of the Wish to save one's Life, which can lead a Man

to the Perpetration of so vile an Offence, which is never committed except by Men who are indifferent about their Life or Honour. Humility towards Officers of Justice, argues Valour and Nobility of Mind, in which consists the Foundation of Peace and Concord. To fly when they pursue us, is not Want of Courage, but an Acknowledgment of their Superiority; and he who is considerate amongst them, is rejoiced to observe that the Offender shews his Respect for him by running away, or retiring from him; and does not wish to pursue, or press him more than he is obliged to do in Justice and Reason. I could not get into the good Graces of this Judge, and therefore resolved (not choosing to resist, or to run away,) to play him the above Trick, which I was convinced would take Effect, and go off merrily; and after this, both he and my Enemy discontinued their Persecution. In order, however, to set my Mind at Ease, I deter-

mined to seek the powerful Protection of some Person, under whose Shelter I might remain in Peace. There was in Seville, at that Time, a great Prince, of a noble Figure, with the perfect Behaviour of a Gentleman; of a handsome Countenance, great Mildness of Temper, and consummate Kindness of Disposition; more of an Angel than a Man; the greatest Friend to good Deeds; loved and admired by the People of that City, for these, and many other good Qualities which shone resplendent in him. He was Nephew of the then Archbishop of Seville, and was known by the Title of Marquess of Denia. I resolved to hit upon some Plan to gain the Favour of this Prince; and conversing with a Friend on the Subject, I said to him: "It is not possible but that I must get into Favour with this great Nobleman." "How will you manage it?" replied he. "Because," said I, "I am so great an Admirer of his Character, that I

am continually holding forth in praise of his admirable Virtues; and it is not possible but that the Constellation which obliges me to this excessive Admiration, should incline towards, and be grateful to me." It happened as I had imagined it would; for while I was standing in the Orange Court, this great Prince passed by: I resolved to address him in the most courteous Manner that I could. He stopped his Coach, and listened to me with the utmost Compassion, granting me the Favour that I requested of him, and desiring me to call upon him. Having been thus received into his Protection, no other unlucky Accident befell me while I remained at Seville; nor had my Competitors the Hardihood to attempt any Thing further against me. For the Favour of Princes and great Lords, has a wonderful Effect in enabling us to lead a quiet Life in Society, when we shelter ourselves under their Protection, and recline in the Shade

of their Presence: and it is wise to do so, were it only for the Sake of imitating their Manners and Customs, which are greatly superior to those of the ordinary Classes of Life. For, as in the Vegetable Creation, those Trees which are best cultivated, yield a better and more abundant Supply of Fruit; so among Men, those who are best instructed, afford a brighter and more perfect Example of Life and Manners; as in the Case of Princes and Noblemen, who are brought up from their Infancy in laudable Habits, without participating in the Ignorance of the licentious Vulgar.

Among high-bred Persons of this Description we find true Politeness. From observing them, we learn what Claim every Class of Persons in Society has upon us; in them we perceive a discreet Reserve, a becoming Patience; and the Occasions when it is necessary to lay these aside: for as they associate continually with the

well-informed, their Practice attains a great Degree of Perfection. Those who avoid the Company of Persons of high Birth, cannot be thoroughly aware what true Nobility is; since it consists in Practice and not in Theory.

CHAP. VI.

The Reader is introduced to some witty Natives of Portugal.

I REMAINED some Time at Seville, passing the Days and Nights in Quarrels and Strife ;—the Effect of Idleness ;—that Root of Vice, and Tomb of Virtue !

I now looked into my Heart, and found that I was far behind my Professions : for in the midst of Idleness, we not only forget to work, but create a Habit extremely difficult to break. He that accustoms himself to Idleness, is long recovering, or perhaps never recovers the bad Consequences of it. Idleness consumes Life in four Ways :—in Sleeping more than is necessary ; Eating out of Season ; in coveting Quiet, and yet losing it by murmuring at every Occurrence.

My Heart weeps Drops of Blood when I see the great Talents of valiant Captains, and most learned Men, subdued by so despicable a Vice as Idleness.

The Idle Man complains of his Unhappiness, and repines at the Happiness of him who, by great Diligence, has vanquished the Waywardness of his Fortune. He is envious of the Advantages which he might have obtained by the same Means.

The Idler never eats with Pleasure, sleeps in Quiet, nor finds the Sweets of Repose; for Listlessness becomes the Executioner and Scourge of Idleness.

I determined to separate myself from this slothful Vice which molested me in Seville; and to this End resolved to go into Italy, in the Service of the Duke of Medina Sidonia, who was about to send several of his Servants to Milan, in an Argosie Galleon. Having obtained this good Situation, I remained in Seville till the Time of our Departure

should arrive. During this Interval, some of those Portugueze came to Seville, who had been found in Africa, after that unfortunate Conflict of King Sebastian, many of them having been ransomed by Philip the Second. I cultivated a Friendship with some of them; and as they have so much Quickness and Sharpness of Wit, I passed many agreeable Moments with them. A Portuguese Gentleman, a Friend of mine, was getting himself shaved one Day, by a Journeyman Barber, who, with a clumsy Hand and a worse Razor, executed his Work so ill, that he took off some of the Skin with the Beard. The Portuguese raised up his Head, and said: “Mr. Barber; if your Object is to flay me, I give you Credit for doing it with a great deal of Ease; but if you are shaving me, you do it very ill.” A Friend of mine was standing with me at the Door of a Church, which they call All Saints, when a Portugueze

Nobleman passed by with six Pages and two Footmen very well dressed in the Castilian Style; and on his taking off his Cap to the Church, we took off ours to him, out of Civility. He turned back, apparently affronted, and said to me: "Mr. Castilian, I beg to tell you, that I did not pull off my Cap to you, but to the most Holy Sacrament." "I can only say, Sir," replied I, "that my Compliment was paid *to you*." He felt Compunction at this Reply, and then added: "Well then, Mr. Castilian, I pulled off my Cap to you." A Portugeuze was walking with a Castilian in the Street of Atambor; and as the Portugeuze was spying about at the Windows to see the Ladies, he did not observe a Hole in the Ground, which threw him down flat on his Face. The Castilian said: "God help you! (or preserve you from Danger)." "He cannot now," replied the Portugeuze. Three Castilians were playing at Primera with one

Portugueze, and he took them in most cleverly; for when they dealt him Fifty-five, he muttered to himself, as if despising his Cards, but so that they could hear him, “The Age of Mahomet.” The others, who had good Hands, and saw him pass, wished him to double his Stake. He accepted it, and one of them throwing down Fifty, and the rest whatever they had in their Hands, the Portugueze produced his Fifty-five Points, and took the Stake. “Pray,” said one of the three, “why did you say you had the Years of Mahomet, which were Forty-eight, when you had Fifty-five Points?” “I thought,” said the Portugueze, “that Mahomet had been older.”

I could relate many other excellent Tales and Specimens of the Wit of these People; but, to avoid Prolixity, I will omit them.

A most destructive Pestilence broke out at this Time in Seville; and an Order was issued by the Police of the City, for all the

Dogs and Cats to be destroyed, lest they should carry the Disease about from House to House.

With the Hope of saving my Life, I removed to a House of the Duke of Medina Sidonia's, at San Lucar, whither I went by the River Guadalquivir ; and such was the Abundance of dead Dogs and Cats floating on the Surface, that the Vessel was sometimes actually retarded by them ; so that we found it necessary to cross over to the other Side.

CHAP. VII.

Marcos embarks at San Lucar—After encountering many Dangers, he arrives at Cabrera.

WE embarked soon after our Arrival at San Lucar; passing through the Straits of Gibraltar, which in one Part appeared so narrow, that one might, by stretching out one's Hands, touch both Sides at once. We beheld the Rock, memorable for its Antiquity, but more memorable on account of the Watchman, or Centinel, who was stationed there at that Period, and for many Years after, and whose Sight was so incredibly clear, that during all the Time he held the Situation, the Coast of Andalucia never received any Injury from the Frontiers of Tetuan. For whenever they prepared any Gallies for Sea on the African Side, he observed them from the Summit of this lofty

Rock, and immediately lighted Torches, or raised a Blaze, as a Signal of their Approach.

I am Witness that one Day when some Gentlemen of Ronda and of Gibraltar were standing together on the Top of the Rock, Martin Lopez the Watchman said to them : “To-morrow at Nightfall we shall have an Alarm, for they are arming Galliot in the Tetuan River ;” the Distance being more than twenty Leagues. And, however much they may extol the extraordinary Powers of Vision possessed by the Lynx, (which was a *Man*, and not an Animal as some suppose,) yet I am persuaded they did not exceed those of Martin Lopez ; for the Corsairs feared him more than the Force sent against them. I wish here to make a cursory Remark on an Opinion, prevalent among Persons who are not much given to Reading, who are deceived in imagining that what are called the Pillars of Hercules, are two Columns which Hercules himself placed in the

Straits of Gibraltar. And another ridiculous Tale is, that they are those which were afterwards placed in the Alameda at Seville, by Don Francisco Zapata, the first Count of Barajas. But the truth is, that these two Pillars are, the Rock of Gibraltar, (so high that it makes the loftiest Ships which pass near it, appear diminutive), and another very lofty Hill in Africa ; one corresponding to the other. Pomponius Mala, *de Situ Orbis*, describes it in the same Manner. To return to my Story :—we passed within Sight of Marbella, Malaga, Carthagenæ, and Alicant, until, launching out into the open Sea, we arrived at the Balearic Islands ; but were not allowed to land there, on account of the bad Reports of the Plague in the Part of the country from whence we came ; and at Majorca they went so far as to point three or four Guns at us. The Wind failing, we continued standing on and off on that Part of the Coast, until we distinguished

fifteen lighted Torches, which alarmed us not a little; for when the News spread itself in Algiers, of the Riches on board the Galleon of so great a Prince, fifteen Corsair Galliot's were sent out in pursuit of us, committing many Ravages on all the Coast; and they would have acted in the same Way towards us, had God permitted the Winds to favour them. With this Intelligence, afforded us by the Signal Towers, we put out to Sea, fortifying our upper Works, and the other exposed Parts of the Vessel, with Sacks of Wool, and other Things which had been brought for the Purpose. The several Posts were allotted as the Captains and old Soldiers belonging to the Galleon thought best. Every thing being now arranged, we waited for the Galliot's, which were seen advancing in the Form of a Crescent; and, as the Wind failed us, they advanced upon us, rowing lustily with their Oars, and soon arrived so near us, that we could reach them

with our Guns. Being determined to die, or to send them to the Bottom, our Galleon fired two Shots at them with so good an Aim, that one of the fifteen Galliot disappeared; and a strong favourable Breeze springing up at the same Moment, we soon lost Sight of the Remainder. The Wind increased with so much Violence, that it carried away our Fore-mast, and made great Havock amongst the Sails and Rigging; continuing to blow with such Fury, that in less than twelve Hours we found ourselves near the City of Frejus in France; and there a contrary Wind taking us suddenly aback, we gave ourselves up for lost, and were then driven the contrary Way, with the same Velocity with which we had advanced. The Galleon was a fine Sailer, and strong enough to save us from Destruction; and by means of the Fore-sail only, we were able to make head, relying on the Strength of the Vessel. On the third Day of the Storm the Timbers

about the Poop began to start, and to creak like the groaning of a Person in Distress. The Sailors became alarmed at this, and determined to escape from us secretly, in the Boat which was hanging astern. But the Soldiers who were not sea-sick, perceiving their Design, prevented it. As we were all now convinced of our Danger, we determined, every Man, to confess and to recommend himself to GOD: but on going, for this Purpose, to two Friars who were on Board with us, they were so sick that they vomited over us; and as the Waves inclined the Vessel first to one Side, and then to the other, those to Windward rolled over those to Leeward, and these back again on them.

There was a Monkey on Board, which continued leaping from one Mast to another, and climbing about on the Rigging, till at last a prodigious Wave washed over the Vessel, carrying off the Monkey with great Violence, and leaving us all well soused in

Water. The poor Monkey remained floating for a long Time, crying out for Help, which at last he obtained. The Sailors had too a Parrot, which was kept a close Prisoner in one of the Tops, continually crying out: “How dost thou do, Parrot?—Like a captive Dog, Dog, Dog!” And he never said it with more Truth than at this Time.

GOD carried us back a second Time to the Neighbourhood of Majorca, to an Island called Cabrera; and on doubling a Point, just as we began to indulge some Hopes, we were met by Mountains of Waves, which drove us out to Sea again, and placed us in the same deplorable Situation from which we had expected to extricate ourselves.

Some of the Sailors having drunk too freely, threw themselves down to sleep near the Cooking-place. A strong Gust of Wind blew some of the Fire over them, singeing the Flesh of one, and the Beard of another; and taking from all, their Inclination to

sleep, and the Heaviness that the Wine had occasioned. My Life too, was exposed to great Danger ; for before the Fore-mast was carried away, my Companions and I had fastened a Mattress, on which we were lying, to the Fore-mast, in order to secure it from the Effect of the Wind, and when the Mast went overboard, it tore away the Mattress, and every Person about it. I remained clinging by a Rope on the Outside of the Galleon; and if they had not come speedily to my Assistance, I must have gone to the Bottom : or, if the Mast had given way four Inches lower down, we should have been canted up to the Clouds with the Violence of the Shock. All, or the greater Part of the Sailors, became Sea-sick. We had no Discipline, although there was among the Crew an active Mate, with a large Beard that extended down to his Waist, of which he was very proud. Ascending by the Rigging to the Top, to secure his Parrot, the

Force of the Wind disunited his Beard, which he usually wore plaited; and twisting itself about one of the Ropes, he was seen hanging aloft by his Beard, like Absalom of old, suspended by the Hairs of his Head. But catching hold of the Yard like an experienced Seaman, he could not get loose, and would have perished, if another Sailor had not gone up by the same Rigging, and cut off his Beard, which he left entwined as it was among the Ropes; and, by this Man's Assistance, he was brought down alive, though greatly ashamed at being seen without his Beard.

We returned to our Labours, and managed as well as we could against the Wind, the Vessel creaking as before; and we entered the Port of Cabrera, a small desert Island, without Inhabitants, or any Communication except with Majorca, where they carry over Provisions for four or five Persons, who guard the highly-situated strong Castle on

the Summit of it, of which Possession is kept rather to prevent the Turks from occupying it, than for any Use they make of it.

The Major-Domo or Steward who was placed over the Duke's Servants had been Sea-sick all this Time; and the first Thing he did on his Recovery, was to examine into the State of the several Articles of which he had Charge; and finding that several Loaves of Sugar were missing, he said: "I shall know presently who has eaten them, (if they *have been* eaten.)" And so it proved; for having devoured large Quantities of the Sugar, it affected their Bowels so violently, that they did not get the better of it again for a Fortnight.

We did not see the Face of the Mate for a Length of Time on account of the Loss he had sustained. In Greece a Beard equal in Length to a Horse's Tail, on the Chin of a Man, would have entitled the Wearer to great Distinction.

This Island is from six to seven Leagues in Circumference, covered with Stones, a very small Proportion of Earth, and that without Trees, except a few Shrubs which do not grow higher than one's Waist. One finds there some large black Lizards, which do not fly from Human Beings ; and very few Birds ; for as there is no Water in which they can cool themselves, they never remain there for any Length of Time.

At last we found an Asylum in this little Island ; for as they had not had any recent Communication with Majorca, they were not aware that we had come from an infected Part of the Country ; and even if they *had* known it, they would have received us, merely for the Pleasure of conversing with Human Beings ; they being so situated themselves as to prevent their seeing any Thing but the deafening Waves that are constantly beating against the Rocks, on which the Castle is built. We remained there fifteen or twenty Days, or more, constructing new Masts, repairing our Rigging, and mending our Sails. During this Period (in the Months of May and June,) we suffered greatly from the Heat, not finding a Spot in the whole Island where to shelter ourselves from the powerful Effects of the Sun, nor a cooling Fountain, except the Cistern out of which the poor Prisoners were accustomed to drink.

CHAP. VII.

The Squire makes a new Acquaintance, not quite to his Satisfaction—His new Friend persuades him to accompany him to Africa, instead of pursuing his Course towards Italy.

AS the Heat was so excessive, and I am of so warm a Temperament, I invited a Friend to accompany me, and we set out together, jumping from Rock to Rock, in quest of some Spot where, either by Shade or Moisture, we might comfort ourselves after our tedious Voyage and past Labours; for indeed we were in great Want of some Refreshment.

While we were occupied in this Pursuit; astonished as we passed along at beholding the Niggardliness of Nature, in leaving that Place in so horrible a State of Sterility, there came a Breeze of Air, wafting such a

celestial Odour of Aromatics, that it appeared as if sent by God for Comfort and Consolation under our Fatigues. I turned my Face towards the East, from whence the fragrant Perfume had come, and observed in the Midst of those sterile Rocks, a delicious verdant Spot; for we saw, a long Way off, the Flowers of the aromatick Shrubs, as large and odoriferous as they are in Andalusia. We now pursued our Course, skipping over the rocky Ground like two Goats, and arrived at a Cave, at the Mouth of which these delicious Shrubs of celestial Odour were growing. And although the Entrance was narrow, it appeared much more spacious below, distilling from above such delightful cool Water, that we were induced to send to the Galleon for Ropes, that we might lower ourselves down, and enjoy the Pleasure of the cooling Shade.

We descended, though not without Difficulty, and found below, a cool agreeable

Apartment. For the Water that filtered through, formed itself into a thousand Shapes, making a great Variety of extraordinary Figures in all the Perfection of Nature. There were Organs, Figures of Patriarchs, Rabbits, and many other Things, which were wonderfully formed by the continual falling of the Water. This Distillation united itself below to a small Brook, that, running among fine red Sand, invited us to drink, which we did with the greatest imaginable Satisfaction. It was altogether an enchanting Spot; for if we looked up, we saw the Mouth of the Cave covered with the Flowers of the aromattick Shrubs, which hung down through the Opening, scattering a more than terrestrial Fragrance throughout the Cave; if we cast our Eyes below, in the Part where we were, we beheld the Water cool, and even cold; and Seats cut in the Rock, in which we could repose ourselves during the excessive Heat, with Space enough besides to

walk about in. We sent for our Dinner, and a Guitar ; with which we amused ourselves very contentedly, singing and playing like the Children of Israel during their Expatriation. We went at Night to sleep at the Castle, though there was always a Guard stationed in the Galleon. We told the Keeper of the Castle, of the Manner in which we had discovered the Cave. He was a Man of a frightful Aspect, with inflamed Eyes, of few Words, and an austere Countenance; and they said of him that he had been the Chief of a Band of Robbers, and for this Reason he was kept in this Castle to guard it. He answered us in very broad Catalan Dialect: “ Take care of yourselves, for the Turks are also acquainted with that Cave.” This Warning did not prevent our going every Day to visit that delightful Retirement, dining and taking our Siesta there. We did this for ten or twelve successive Days. But having dined there one Day, while we were

reposing after it, some Red Turbans and White Mantles shewed themselves at the Mouth of the Cave. We jumped up, and the Moment they observed us, (for they were advancing carelessly before,) one of them said, in the Castilian Tongue, very clearly and well pronounced: "Surrender, Dogs!" My Companions remained astonished at hearing the Spanish Language under a Moorish Turban; and one of them said, "They must be the People of our Galleon, who are come to play us a Trick." Another Turk spoke and said: "Surrender quickly, or you are dead Men." My three Companions put their Hands to their Swords, with the Intention of defending themselves. I said to them: "What Good can our Defence produce, when they have the Power of overwhelming us with Stones, without making use of the Muskets that we see in their Hands?" And I cried out to those above: "I give myself up to him who

spoke Spanish. Pray come down and refresh yourselves ; or, if you prefer it, we will carry Water up to you, for we are your Slaves.” “ That is not necessary,” said the Turk-Spaniard ; “ for we are coming down.” We prayed inwardly to God that our Companions in the Galleon might come to a Knowledge of our Misfortune, in order to remedy it.

My Comrades were very sorrowful, and I resigned to my Fate : for in all the Variety of Mischances that befall Men, there is no Remedy so good as Patience. As I possessed it, I put a good Face upon the Matter, though suffering that Distress which every one must feel, who, having been always free, commences a Life of Slavery. It behoves us to vanquish bad Fortune by a good Spirit. There is not a more unhappy Being than he who, having been always happy, is visited by any great Calamity. I observed to my Companions, that in order to estimate

the Good Things of Life, it was necessary to experience some of the Evils ; advising them to support themselves patiently under this Affliction, as they would thereby lessen its Weight.

I prepared to receive the Turks, who were now descending, with a good Countenance ; and, approaching him that spoke Spanish, with marked Submission and Humility of Demeanour, addressed him as a Gentleman of high Rank, and gave him to understand that I had known him before ; with which he was much pleased, and told the Turks, his Companions, that I had known him as a Nobleman and chief Personage. For I learnt afterwards that he was one of the Descendants of Moors, the most esteemed in the Kingdom of Valencia, and that he had become a Renegado, carrying off a pretty handsome Load of Gold and Silver. Finding that the Flattery I had used, in calling him a Gentleman and a

Nobleman, took Effect, I went on talking more and more Nonsense to him in the same Strain; for he had come thither as Chief of two Galliot's of his own, (which had remained of the fifteen,) and which, for the want of a fair Breeze, still lay concealed in a little Creek; from whence they carried us away hand-cuffed, that same Day; and as he found that I played on the Guitar, my Master took me aside, and said to me in a low Voice: "Go on conducting yourself as you have begun, for I am Chief in these Galliot's; it will be advantageous to my Reputation, and may procure you better Treatment." I attended carefully to this Hint, and explained to the People, when he was out of the Way, that he belonged to a noble and principal Family.

Our Fortune was so far from good, that we had fine Weather presently; and, directing our Course towards Algiers, we sailed on before the Wind, without making any use of

our Oars. They stripped us of our Spanish Clothes, and gave us, instead of them, some miserable Dresses, such as are worn by Galley Slaves; in which Capacity my Companions were to serve, the Captain keeping me to attend on himself.

Not wishing to remain silent, while we were so agreeably wafted along by the gentle Breeze, my Master began a Conversation by asking me my Name; who I was; and of what Profession. To the first, I replied that my Name was Marcos de Obregon, a Son of Mountaineers, in the Valley of Cayon. The Attention of the rest being occupied in listening to a Moor, who was singing with a great deal of Taste, they could not hear our Conversation; and therefore I ventured, before I replied to his Questions at greater Length, to ask him whether he was a Christian, or the Son of Christian Parents? For his Person and Figure, and the Beauty of a young Son he had with him, made me con-

jecture that they were Spaniards. He answered me very willingly: in the first place, because the Subject was Christianity; and in the second, because the other People continued still attentive to the young Musician. He therefore told me that he had been baptized, and was a Son of Christian Parents, and that his Removal to Algiers did not proceed from any Disrespect to his Religion, which he well knew was the true one, by which our Souls would be saved: “But,” said he, “I was born with the Feelings and Spirit of a Spaniard, and I could not endure the Insults which I received every Day from Persons greatly my Inferiours, nor the Frauds which they practised on my Person and Property, (which was not small,) feeling that I was a Descendant from an ancient Christian Family.” By the same Motives are all those influenced who pass over every Day, not only from the Kingdom of Valencia, (which is my Country), but from that of Granada,

and all other Parts of Spain. I, like all the rest, was much hurt at not being advanced to the Dignity and Office of Magistrate, and to other superior Honours; and vexed at finding that this Degradation was to last for ever; and that, to remove so great an Injury, it was not sufficient to profess the Christian Religion sincerely, and to act up to one's Professions. To see that a Man without Birth, inherited or acquired Talents, who had raised himself two Inches above the Dirt, should presume to bestow infamous Appellations on a real Christian and Gentleman; and above all to observe how distant appeared the Remedy for all these Evils—What have you to say to all this?”

“In the first place,” replied I, “that the Church has considered the Subject with a great deal of Wisdom; and in the next, that he who has Faith in Baptism, ought never to relinquish it; nor suffer himself, by any Misfortunes or Troubles that may come upon

him, to be intimidated into an Abandonment of it." "All this I am ready to acknowledge," said the Moor; "but what human Patience can enable one to endure, that a low Fellow without Birth or Talents, whose Lineage being quite obscure, forgets his Origin in Society, and loses all Recollection of his past Situation—that such an Animal as this should become intoxicated with his good Fortune, and set himself above Men of much greater Worth and Talents than his own?" "As to all this," said I, "God being the true Judge; if he permits us to be injured here, he will not deny us our Reward hereafter. The Injury does not proceed from the Statutes of the Church, but from the malicious Construction put upon them by those who are envious of the Fame of worthier Persons than themselves." "Those Persons," said the Moor, "being devoid of Merit, take Occasion to interpret the Statutes according to their wicked Intentions; not to

strengthen them, nor to serve God, or the Church thereby; but, as the Saying is, to set themselves above their Superiors.” “The Church,” said I, “does not make Statutes to encourage us to take away the Honour of our Neighbours, but that Religion may be employed to the greatest possible Advantage.”

I was about to proceed; but the young Moor having left off singing, my Master desired me to be silent; and again putting his first Questions, I replied to all in a few Words, saying: “I am a Mountaineer from the Neighbourhood of Santander, in the Valley of Cayon, though I was born in Andalusia. My Name is Marcos de Obregon, and I am not of any Trade; for in Spain Gentlemen do not learn Trades; preferring rather to suffer Want, or to go to Service, to engaging in Trade: for the Nobility of the Mountains was acquired by the Profession of Arms, and by the Services rendered to

the Crown ; and therefore they do not wish to blot their Escutcheons by engaging in low Trades, but choose rather to support themselves on the little they have, living in the poorest Way possible, but preserving their Laws of Chivalry, and going about in ragged Gloves and Stockings.”

“ I will take care,” said my Master, “ that you shall know some Trade or another.”

One of my Companions, who had been sent to the Oar, then exclaimed : “ At all Events that shall not be my Case, nor shall it be said in Spain, that a Gentleman of the House of Mantillas practised a Trade in Algiers.”

“ What, you Dog !” said my Master, “ are you at the Oar, and do you talk of these Vanities ? Give this *Gentleman* fifty Blows.”

“ I intreat, Sir,” said I, “ that you will pardon his Ignorance and Folly ; for he knows no better ; neither is he a Gentleman, only in his own Estimation, for he does not so much as know how to act as

one; but by saying that he is so, he hopes to eat and drink without working: and he is not the first Vagabond that they have had in *that* House, if he does belong to it.” And then I added, addressing myself to him: “How now, Barbarian? are we in a state to refuse doing what we are ordered? Now is the Time for us to learn to be humble; for Obedience confines our Will to the Pleasure of another; the subordinate Will can have no Choice. From the Moment that a Man loses his Liberty, he is no longer Master of his Actions; he has only one Remedy by which to make himself a little free; which is, to exercise his Patience and Humility, and not to hope to avoid that by Force, which perforce must be done: if we do not presently begin to exercise a Habit of Patience, we shall be compelled to make a Habit of Punishment. To obey a Superior cheerfully, is in some Measure to make him our Slave. As Humility engenders Love,

so does Pride engender Hatred. The Estimation in which a Slave is held, must arise from the Pleasure of his Master, and this may be acquired by a good-natured Humility. We are Slaves here; and if we humble ourselves to perform our Duty, they will treat us as free Men, and not as Slaves.”

“ Oh! how well you talk!” said my Master; “ and what Satisfaction it affords me to have met with you, that you may become my Son’s Tutor: for not having hitherto met with such a Christian as you, I have not provided one for him. In our Part of the World, there is no one who knows how to give the Instruction taught amongst Christians to young Children.” “ He is, in truth,” said I, “ such a fine young Creature, that it would be necessary for me to possess great Worth and Information, to educate him as he deserves; but, though so handsome and graceful, there is one Thing wanting in him.” The other Moors were atten-

tive to what was passing, and said to his Father : “ What is this that he is deficient in ? ” I answered : “ That which his Father can spare . ” “ What is there that I can spare ? ” said the Father . “ Baptism ! ” replied I , “ which is of no use to you . ” He ran to fetch a Cudgel to beat me with, and at the same Moment I seized hold of the Boy to defend myself against him . The Cudgel fell from his Hands, at which they all laughed ; and the Rage of the Father was moderated, which would not have been the Case if he had discharged the Blow upon his Son . He pretended to be very angry, in order to deceive his Companions and the Soldiers ; for they all considered him sincerely attached to the Deggish or Turkish Religion ; though *I* was satisfied, from the little Intercourse I had held with him, that he was inclined to return to the true Catholic Faith . “ Why, do you think , ” said he , “ I came from Spain to Algiers, but to de-

stroy all these Fancies, as I have hitherto done to the utmost of my Power, and will do yet more effectually?" When they found that he was enraged, they were desirous I should be sent to the Oar:—but he said: "Let him alone, for every one is bound to stand up for his Religion; and this Man, when he becomes a Mahometan, will act in the same Way." "Yes," said I, "I will, but I am not become so yet:" and, in order to appease his Anger more, he desired me to take the Guitar which we had brought out of the Cave. I did so; and it recalled to my Mind the Song of the Children of Israel when they were in Captivity. They pursued their Course very joyfully, with the Wind right aft, while I sang to my Guitar, without our experiencing any Change of Wind, or any Alarm of any Enemy, until we discovered the Towers on the Coast of Algiers, and presently after the City itself;

and as the Inhabitants had given them up for lost, they shewed great Demonstrations of Joy when they found that the Galliot of the Renegado were returning.

On their Arrival at the Port, they were received with great Tokens of Satisfaction, particularly as they brought in a Prize. A loud Shouting was heard, and the Sound of Moorish Flutes, together with the other Kinds of Instruments they are accustomed to use, and which serve more to create Confusion and Tumult, than to gratify the Ear with their agreeable Melody.

The Wife and Daughter of the Chief came down to receive him. The Daughter had the Air and Grace of a Spaniard, with a white and red Complexion, and fine blue* Eyes; and really she appeared more like one born in France, than brought up in

* In the Spanish "*bellos ojos verdes*," fine green Eyes, which I have ventured to change into blue. *Tr.*

Algiers ; her Nose inclining to aquiline, of a cheerful and very agreeable Countenance, and altogether very handsome.

The Renegado, who was a sensible Man, taught all his Children the Spanish Language, in which his Daughter now addressed him with great Tenderness ; and Tears flowed down her rosy Cheeks, Pleasure drawing them from her Heart, and producing the same Effect as if she had heard bad News.

I made a lowly Obedience, first to the Daughter, then to the Mother ; for Nature inclined me towards the former with great Violence. I then said to my Master : “ I consider my Captivity, Sir, as a great Piece of good Fortune, since, besides having fallen into the Hands of so great a Nobleman, it has brought me to be the Slave of such a Daughter, and such a Wife, who more resemble Angels than Creatures of this lower World.” “ Ah ! my Father,”

said the young Girl, “ how polite these Spaniards are!” “ They are capable,” said the Father, “ of teaching Politeness to all the Nations of the World ; and this Slave in a greater Degree, for he is a Gentleman of a noble Biscayan Family, and very discreet withall.” “ And how is it,” said the Daughter, “ that he wears these old shabby Clothes? Do let him dress in the Spanish Style.” “ This shall all be done,” replied the Father ; “ but now that we have returned safe and free, let us repose after the Fatigues of our Voyage.”

CHAP. IX.

Marcos gives an Account of his Captivity, and relates certain Circumstances which render it somewhat palatable.

I FOUND a very agreeable Protection in the Mother and Daughter, but much more in the Daughter; for as she had heard her Father say a great deal in favour of Spain, (and that which is absent is always most desired,) she was anxious in the extreme to see any Thing that belonged to Spain, and especially its Inhabitants; for Nature had pointed out that Road to her. They were more kind to me than to the rest of the Slaves: but I served with more Good-will than the others, as well from what I had seen of the World, as because I was not very unwilling to visit Algiers, that I might fall in with a Brother of mine, who was in

Captivity there : and it was fortunate that before I made Inquiries after him, I learnt by Accident that he had excited some other Slaves to join him, and, taking a Boat, (after killing the Owners of it,) they gave themselves up to Fortune, or rather to the Will of God, and, the Hearts of his Companions failing them, he put his Design in Execution, and succeeded so well, that he came to Spain, and afterwards died at Jatelet; and if they had known that I was his Brother, perhaps it might not have fared so well with me. I served my Employers with the greatest Pleasure and Diligence that I was capable of; and *my Services* were more grateful to them than those of the other Captives, because I made a Virtue of Necessity; and having gained their Good-will at first, it was not difficult to preserve it afterwards. I treated them with great Respect and Courtesy, sacrificing my own Will, and forcing it to that to which it was not in-

clined, viz. Slavery! For to Men naturally free, Time and Necessity teach them what is expected from them.

I humbled myself more than I was naturally inclined to do; for I am persuaded that to yield to superior Force is the Conduct of valiant and noble Minds. *He* possesses little Valour, and less Prudence, who does not learn to accommodate himself to Circumstances. For to serve cheerfully when one serves perforce, is to take Fortune by the Hand; while to pay an *unwilling* Obedience to him who has us completely in his Power, is to risk our Happiness, and perhaps our Life; and after all, he who, while in a State of Servitude, does his best, may at least live securely.

Although I found myself so kindly noticed by my Superiours, I did not fail on that Account to shew what Kindness I could to the other Captives, nor to take a Share in their Labours: for, in order to subdue the

envious Feeling of others, it is necessary to make use of these, and many other Exertions. There is no Set of People more completely governed by this Passion than Slaves, who are Persecutors of their Equals, and only Guardians of the Honour and Property of their Masters. I have seen very few among such as are reduced to this miserable State, who have not had some low Habit or another. Besides the *general* good Treatment I received, I observed in my young Mistress, that whenever I passed near her, she always changed Colour: at first, I attributed this to her great Modesty; but afterwards, by her Perseverance, and the Experience I had had in similar Affairs, (which was not trifling,) I discovered what her Complaint was. She ordered me every Day to do a Million of Things, the Direction of which she had nothing to do with, nor was it my Business to execute them: but I confess that it delighted my Soul to serve her, and

I should have been pleased if she could have found yet more Employment for me ; all the Toys I could make, came at last into her Hands, she being pleased with them, and saying they came from Spain ; so much so, that one Day, blushing like a wild Poppy, she told me, that if nothing else had come from Spain but he who gave them to her, she would have been contented ; and then she ran away and hid herself. My Heart became too much softened by all these Proofs of her Affection : but I reflected on my Situation, that having to seek the Liberty of my Body, I was going the Way to lose my Soul ; and that the least Evil which could befall me, was to remain as Son-in-Law in the House. Meditating on all this, I found great Fault with myself ; but the more I attempted to oppose my Inclinations, the less Power of Resistance did I find in myself ; and I believe that the Remedy for these Passions, consists principally in leaving them to them-

selves. I learnt too, that when a Passion of this Kind enters a Man's Heart, it takes such complete Possession of him, that he is unfit for any Thing else: and although I persuaded myself that I might bear this sweet Burthen for my Amusement, Experience taught me that Love is a King, who, when one has put him in Possession, will be absolute Monarch of the Heart. But it appeared that it would be an Inconsistency in my Conduct, if I, who had always boasted of my Gratitude, should now be ungrateful; though, to this End, I brought to mind the Suspicion that her Parents would entertain if they had Reason to think that there was any Thing going on between us. I considered, moreover, that I was amongst the Enemies of my Nation and Faith, and the bad Return I should make for the Kindness shewn me by the Father, who had put his Son into my Hands, that I might instruct him; and above every other Consideration,

the Circumstance of her not having been baptized. I resolved at last, that, however great my Love might be, I would still treat her with Indifference. The poor Girl perceiving the Alteration in my Conduct, shewed great Melancholy of Heart, and Sorrow, which appeared in her Eyes, (those Channels and Lights of the Soul,) in the Absence of Colour in her Face, Hesitation in her Speech, and Agitation in her whole Behaviour. They asked her what ailed her; and she replied, that it was a Sort of Illness which she had never had before, and that she did not know what Name to give it. They inquired whether there was any Thing that she desired to have? She replied, that it would be impossible to accomplish what she desired, which was to visit Spain; and this she said in a Tone between merry and sorrowful. Her Melancholy increased so much, that they confined her to her Bed, greatly against her Will, as it prevented her

from being visited by those she liked; for no one could enter her Apartment except the Women, and those vigilant Gentry the Eunuchs, who, having no Passions to prevent them, act their Part with great Diligence; for these young Girls have no Experience of the World, nor do they understand the Management of their Appetites and Passions. This Passion makes more Impression on a new Subject, than on one who knows what she has to guard against. If what has been sown wants Water, after it is pretty well grown up, the Deficiency is of no material Consequence; but if it fails before the Plant has acquired Strength, it presently withers and turns yellow; and thus it is with all the Works of Nature. Those Damsels who are ignorant of the Ways of the World, are apt to decline with the first Disappointment; as was the Case with this young Lady, whom I loved, however, better than she was aware of.

CHAP. X.

The Squire succeeds in charming away the young Lady's Melancholy—His Skill involves him in unpleasant Consequences—The Dexterity he employs to extricate himself.

AT last they began to attempt the Cure of her Malady; giving a thousand Remedies, which went nigh to destroy her: and as she was so beautiful, and of so amiable a Disposition, her Illness was known all over Algiers, to the great Regret of every Body.

As I was acquainted with the Cause of her Melancholy, and of my own Pain and Dissimulation, I considered how I might see and comfort her; and it occurred to me that I might manage to make Love to her in presence of her Parents without their perceiving it, and that they should take me to her for the Purpose: under this Security I

told the Father, that I had learnt certain Words, of a very clever Man in Spain, which on being whispered in the Ear, would cure the Patient of any Sort of Melancholy he was afflicted with, how profound soever it might be; but that it must be received with great Faith by the Sufferer, without any other Person hearing what was said. The Father replied: “ Only cure my Daughter, I care not by what Means.” The Mother with the same Anxiety intreated me to commence the Cure immediately.

I accompanied them into the Room where the Women were attending the sick young Lady, as clean and neatly dressed as I was able, (for Neatness of Appearance is a great Promoter of Love). The Father and Mother, on entering, said to her: “ Daughter, cheer up, for here comes Obregon to cure thee of thy Melancholy; you must have Faith in the Words he will utter for that Purpose.”

Having ordered all the Women to leave the Room, I approached the Patient with the utmost Courtesy, and having placed my Head close to her Ear, whispered the following Charm in it: “ My dear young Lady, be assured that the Dissembling of the few past Days has not been caused by Forgetfulness, or by any Alteration in my Sentiments ; but it has arisen from Caution and Regard for your Honour, which I value more than the Life that sustains me.” Having said this, I withdrew from her Side ; and presently, with celestial Grace, she opened those divine Eyes, which brightened the Hearts of all the By-standers, and exclaimed : “ Is it possible that the Words of Spain are so powerful ? for it is six Days since I have heard any like them.”

But this all proved unfortunate to me ; for, as soon as the Fame of this Cure was spread abroad, other Melancholy People of various Descriptions sent to beg that I would cure

them, without my being able even to guess how I was to manage it, or knowing any Thing of the Cause of their Malady, except by Hearsay. The Family of the young Lady were all delighted, and extolled the Power of the Words as well as the Courtesy and Humility I had used in pronouncing them. The young Lady was desirous to rise from her Bed immediately, on the Strength of the Charm; but I said to her: “Now that you are only beginning to improve a little, it will not be advisable for you to consider yourself perfectly well; you had better remain where you are for the present, and I will come again and whisper these Words, and some of still greater Excellence, if you wish it, and my Lord and Lady will give their Consent.” I did so several Times, until she left her Bed again, and gave favourable Testimony of me, by shewing that I had the Power of curing Melancholy. They rejoiced greatly at see-

ing her recovered, and I much more than they, for I loved her tenderly.

At this same Time a Lady, handsome and young, the Wife of one of the greatest People of the Place, was afflicted with Melancholy also: for having been ill, so profound a Melancholy ensued, that she neither cared to see or converse with any Body. But when the Recovery of my Master's Daughter reached the Ears of her Husband, he requested of my Master that he would send the Slave to him who understood curing Melancholy. My Master, wishing to please him, said to me: "You are a most fortunate Fellow; for Such-a-one, a Gentleman of great Wealth, and held in high Estimation both in Algiers and by the Grand Turk, has sent to beg that you may go to his House and cure his Wife of Melancholy; and as she is a fine handsome Woman, you will be delighted to visit her." "Oh! Sir," said I, "do not order me to go, I entreat you; for if I have

gone through this Ceremony once, it was only from seeing how deeply you were afflicted by the Illness of your Daughter; and you are well aware how badly any Thing is received here, which is said or done by virtue of the true Religion.” “ It is absolutely necessary for you to go,” said he; “ for it is of great Consequence to me to keep him in Good-humour.” “ I hope, Sir,” replied I, “ that you will make an Excuse to him for me, as these Words will not have the same Effect with all Persons; for it is necessary to have as much Faith in them as your Daughter had, and this will probably not be the Case with the Lady in question.” I assigned various other Causes to excuse myself, in Hopes of getting off this Visit. He went to speak to the Gentleman on the Subject; but the more he said to excuse my going, so much the more did the other persist in it; until at last he told me, that if I objected any longer, he would compel me by

Force. “ Unfortunate Man that I am!” exclaimed I to myself; “ who made me a Surgeon or Physician to cure Melancholy? What Remedies or Charms am I acquainted with? How shall I manage now to get out of this cruel Dilemma? For either I must cure her of her Melancholy, or I shall be doomed to suffer for it all the Remainder of my Days. To make Love to her as I did to the other, I neither can, nor would she understand me if I did; nor have I any Reason to think that her Malady is of this Sort. Then to whisper in her Ear Stories about Saints and the true Religion, would only be to increase her Illness, and to procure myself the Bastinado; though God has sufficient Power to convert Stones into Bread, and Pagans into Christians. At last I made up my Mind to the desperate Undertaking, my Master accompanying me as my Interpreter. In order to render the Cure more certain, I carried a Guitar under my Cloak,

resolving if possible to succeed, and to this End, provided all the necessary Means. I entered the Lady's Apartment with an unembarrassed Air, and said to her, in a cheerful Tone of Voice: " I have no Doubt, Madam, but that you will be cured ; for the Words I shall employ are only useful in the Cure of very handsome Ladies, and you are most beautiful ; I have confident Hopes that your Health will, therefore, be re-established." She received this Charm (which is most efficacious with Women in general) with very good Will. I then said to her: " You must have great Faith, Madam, in the Words I am about to pronounce, and let your Imagination be impressed with the Conviction that your Malady has already fled." Her confidence in the Charm being therefore firmly fixed, and her Imagination well prepared, I went towards her, and whispered in her Ear, the following excessive Nonsense, which I had learnt while

studying at Salamanca : “ Barbara cœlarent Darii ferio Baralipton, Cœlantes dabitis fapesmo frisesomorum.” And then taking out my Guitar, I sang a thousand foolish Things to her, of which neither she nor I understood the Meaning. So great was the Force of her Imagination, that before I left her, she began laughing, and intreated that I would come again very often, and that I would give her those precious Words written in her own Language. I returned Thanks to God at finding myself so well out of this Difficulty, and began thinking of Means to avoid curing any more sick Persons ; but as I had acquired a great Reputation, if any one sent for me, I pretended that it gave me a violent Heartburn, and in this Way escaped further Trials. But I should mention the Jealousy which my young Mistress felt, from supposing that I had whispered the same Words to the other Lady that I had to her ; I found her weeping on

account of it, but pacified her as soon as I had an Opportunity of speaking to her; and, as she was very young, and possessed of but little Experience, she believed every Thing that I told her; and as I loved her with my whole Heart, it grieved me that any Thing done by me should give her a Moment's Uneasiness.

One Day when her Parents were from Home, (for they had great Confidence in me,) she told me that I might speak before her Women, as they did not understand my Language. I therefore spoke thus to her: "How great is our Unhappiness, my dear young Lady, (though in one View it appears a great Piece of good Fortune for me,) that you, being an Angel in Beauty, of a tender Age, and yet matured Wisdom and Prudence, should have delivered up your Will and Desires to a Man loaded with Years, and without Riches or Worth:—that you, who are deserving of the best Man that the World

can give, do not refuse to receive into your Service one of fallen Fortunes, who is ready to submit to whatever Evils Heaven has to impose!—That a poor Reptile, cast away by the Fury of the Sea; ill-treated by Fortune, thrown into a miserable State of Servitude, should have found such a sovereign Protection in your innocent Breast! That the lovely Object on which the Eyes and Affections of all are fixed, should have received into her Esteem, him who will ever be content with remaining her Slave!—Let it not be supposed that the Thought of violating your Chastity has ever existed in my Imagination; nor can my Desires ever extend so far. By such great and unmerited Favours, I have been raised to imagine myself a Being of some Estimation; not supposing, that otherwise your Eyes could debase themselves to observe my poor Person.” With her Face of the Colour of the most beautiful Carmine, her Hands trembling, and her whole Body in a State

of violent Emotion, she thus addressed me :
“ As to the first Point, I must tell you, Sir, that I do not know how to reply to it ; as it came upon me without my seeking it, or knowing why or wherefore. But with respect to the second, it arises from not having seen any Creature here, of whom I could think favourably ; for, after I came to know that my Father had been baptized, I abhorred the Thoughts of connecting myself with any one in this Country. And if I were so happy as to become a Christian, I should desire nothing more than that, and and the Blessings I enjoy at present.” And, taking out her Handkerchief as if to wipe her Face, she covered her Head with it, appearing to condemn herself for having spoken so freely. She remained like a Lily among Roses, and I silent ; being occupied merely with observing and contemplating the wonderful Effects which her Modesty produced.

Hearing her Father and Mother in the Street, on their Return ; I rose up, and taking my Guitar sang : “ Ah ! how happily my Thoughts have been realized ! ” They rejoiced at hearing me sing ; for as my Master had at Heart every Thing that belonged to Spain, he was always much gratified at listening to Spanish Airs. I guessed afterwards, from the Expressions of the young Lady, and from other Circumstances, that my Eyes had betrayed their Secret, and that they were treating me as the future Husband of their Daughter, and the Heir to the Galliot. I gave Lessons to the Son, and instructed him as well as I could in the Truths of Christianity. For the Father did not object to this, although he made War against the Christians, committing very great Ravages on the Coasts of Spain, and in the Balearic Islands. This gave me the Opportunity of enjoying some Moments of agreeable Conversation with his Sister ; and it was carried on

with much Politeness and Circumspection, so that nothing passed on these Occasions, but what was perfectly pure and modest. But as one never can enjoy these Pleasures long together, without the Interference of some cross Accident, the Devil stirred up the Heart of an old Woman to disturb our Quiet. She had been a Captive many Years, had lost her Teeth, had a very bad Countenance, a large Mouth with a falling Lip like a Sheep, gummy Eyes, and a deformed Person; and was so lean and miserable, that she went about complaining that her Master and Mistress starved her. This Person, because I had not made her a Present, (that is, had not given her what I did not possess,) represented in a bad Light, the Simplicity of the young Lady, as well as the Courtesy with which I treated her. The Consequence was, that her Parents prohibited our meeting, and shut her up a close Prisoner. It appeared to this cursed old Woman, that by

ingratiating herself in this Way with her Master and Mistress, she should experience better Treatment than that which she had hitherto received. But it did not succeed with her as she had expected: for as Love is a great Discoverer of Secrets, I soon came to a Knowledge of the Part the old Slave had acted, and determined at once that the Daughter should be acquainted with it. And as she was so much beloved by her Parents, they gave Credit to all that she advanced against the old Woman; and the Result was, that she was never again permitted to enter the young Lady's Apartment, nor to eat and drink in peace, while I remained in the House. A just Reward for Tale-bearers! If all who act in this Way were as badly received and paid, the World would enjoy a great deal more Happiness. Did Tale-bearers but know how ill they are esteemed by those to whom they carry their idle Stories, they would rather desire to be

mute, than to be Babblers. And if those who listen to them, would inquire into the Merits of the Case, they would soon discover that they do not relate their Tales out of any good Will towards him that hears them, but from a malignant Feeling towards him of whom they are told, and in Hopes of revenging themselves on him by the Hands of another.

Tale-bearing is a Species of Flattery, engendered in bad Hearts, which should annoy those who hear it, and discredit those who tell it. It is right to keep the Secrets of every one, but those of the Tale-bearer. An idle Tale hurts three Persons—him who tells it, him *to whom*, and him *of whom* it is told. In this Case, the Parents were grieved, the old Woman rendered odious, the young Lady tormented, and I was for a Time deprived of the Pleasure I had previously enjoyed, and also of the Estimation in which I had been held.

The Renegado was a sensible Man; and although he treated his Daughter so rigorously, he dissembled with respect to me, taking care not to give me a Hint of the Cause of his Anger, until he should be able to make Inquiries into the Truth of the Story. But he took care, at the same Time, that I should be employed in servile Offices, such as carrying Water and the like, more to witness my Sorrow, than with the Intention of making me always labour. As I comprehended his Meaning very well, I did every Thing he set me to do, with the utmost Alacrity; thus endeavouring to relieve his Mind from the Uneasiness in which he lived. For to eradicate from the Breast a Suspicion that affects the Honour, it is necessary to practise a thousand Stratagems, which should neither be too obvious, nor yet far removed from the Truth. To change at once from Cheerfulness of Countenance to downright Melancholy, is a Novelty easily discernible:

while to perform assiduously more than one's ordinary Duties, goes far towards confirming the Suspicion. The Medium one should observe is acquired simply by Humility and Patience, and it ought not to differ from one's common Behaviour. I did all that he ordered me, without murmuring, and with the same Goodwill as before.

I used to go, with the Obedience of a Slave, to fetch Water from a Fountain called Babason. This Water was very pure, and held in much Estimation in that City, where there is a great Number of Gardens, Vineyards, and Olive-Grounds, valuable alike on account of the Profit derived from them, and as Places of Recreation. A Turk, whom I found there one Day, told me that it was not known where that Water took its Rise, or how it came thither. For two Turks and two Captives having conveyed it down from the Summit of the neighbouring Mountains, with great Labour and Risk, the King, or

Viceroy, rewarded them for their Trouble by Strangulation ; lest at some future Time they should reveal the Secret, and thus stop the Supply of Water, which is so valuable to the City. For if it should be besieged, the greatest Injury it could receive, would arise from cutting off this Supply ; and this would cause its Surrender or Capture sooner than any other Measures that could be adopted. And they live with so much Caution, that every Governor endeavours to discover some new Invention for the Improvement of the Fortifications of his City. To such an extreme is this Caution carried, that, on the Friday, when the Men go to their Mosques, they leave their Women and Slaves well locked up, and their Houses strongly barred, as the best Security against Treachery.

Now it would seem from this Account, that one might easily visit a young Girl while she is thus shut up. But this is not

the Case, for the Men leave so strong a Guard in their Houses, that they go out without Fear; and if the Devil himself wished to put such a Design in execution, he would find it more easy to sack the whole City, than to excite Treachery in the House of one Individual; because they leave, as their Guard, a Description of Men, who, in fact, are not Men; nor do they appear so by their Countenances. And these Gentry, either because they are considered particularly faithful, or because none can supply their Places, are so vigilant in guarding what is put under their Charge, that it is not possible, by any Means, to deceive, or render them inattentive.

Though I wished to avail myself of a little Deceit, yet I was already aware of the incorruptible Fidelity of these artificial Monsters; I was afraid to put it to the Proof, until the Eunuch or Guard of the Ladies

himself, found fault with me for not going into the Women's Apartment, considering me a Person not unacquainted with the Customs of the Place. To which I replied : that I did not wish to do that which was not customary in my own Country ; where it never was allowed that the Men should associate with the Women.

I continued to act with so much Vigilance towards this Spy, that he never caught me tripping ; which was what my Master wished ; and the Eunuch, though an ill-conditioned Fellow, remained on good Terms with me.

These Gentry are considered in Society, as malevolent ; but whether justly, I cannot say. The Liberty they use in not dissembling any Thing, leaves them rather as Children than as malevolent Persons. This is to be understood of such among them as do not profess Musick : for among those that do, I have known many sensible, good Men ; such

as was **Primo Racionera** of **Toledo**, and as is **Luis Onguero**, Chaplain to his Majesty, and others of this Description, concerning whom I shall say no more, that I may avoid **Prolixity**.

CHAP. XII.

Gives an Insight into the Manners and Customs of the Moors.

MY Master being now in high Good-humour at the Recovery of his Daughter, and satisfied of my Fidelity, Things returned to their old State, and I to the Reputation and Estimation in which I had formerly been held. In fact, however, the Daughter still retained somewhat of her Melancholy, and her Mother was so much vexed at seeing her unhappy, that the young Lady withdrew herself a good deal from her Society, fretting and becoming sullen. The Mother continued thinking how to please her, seeking Methods to amuse her, and remove her Grief; for she carried in her Countenance a Sort of fixed Melancholy, which kept us all in suspense; me from Love, and the others

from Fear lest she should become seriously ill.

At length, as their great Object was to please and make her cheerful, her Mother begged that my Master would order me to repeat those famous Words against Melancholy; for she found that nothing else would have the Effect of restoring her former good Spirits. He ordered me to try the Experiment again; and I said, in reply: "I have no Doubt but this Melancholy proceeds from some deep-rooted Vexation, and consequently it will be necessary to repeat the Words several Times, in order to eradicate the Foundation of the Evil thoroughly from her Heart. I shall also put some Questions to her, the answering of which will enable me better to remove her Pain."

I said this, that I might be left a longer Time in Conversation with her; first repeating the Charm I had used before, and then others still more efficacious; to all

which, she gave her Answers very readily, appearing very well contented with my having explained to her that the true Health, Content, and Pleasure of the Soul must spring from that Water of Baptism which her Father had despised. And having conversed with, and instructed her on this Head, during the half Hour I remained with her, I retired.

The Mother was rejoiced at what she saw, and begged that I would teach *her* the Words of the Charm. I replied: “ No one must venture to repeat these Words, Madam, but he who has been in the Straits of Gibraltar, in the Islands of Riaran, at the Pillars of Hercules, and at Mongibelo, in Sicily; also at the Top of Cabra, in the Mine of Ronda, and in the Court-yard of the Pacheca; for if any other Person attempts to recite them, he will see infernal Visions, sufficient to terrify the most courageous Person. By my telling her this,

and a whole Heap of Nonsense, her Wish to be made acquainted with the Charm, was presently removed.

Though I felt some Relief from these Visits that I was now permitted to make my young Mistress, I still felt as a Man deprived of his Liberty, in a miserable State of Slavery, among Enemies of the true Faith, and without the least Prospect of obtaining my Freedom. So that while the poor Damsel's Love continued to increase, mine began to diminish: for this is a Passion that resides in Bosoms unoccupied by Troubles and Vexations.

What Effect can an idle Passion, like Love, be expected to produce on an afflicted Soul? Yet what Pleasure can he taste, who lives without it? How can *he* find a Time for courting his Mistress, who is constantly suffering under the Calamities of Life? How can sweet expressions be expected to proceed from that Mouth, through

which so many bitter Cups are passing? In short, Love chooses to visit us without any other Companions, and then only young Men free from any particular Ties, and possessed of Prudence, and wherewithal to live. Even in their Case it is a Passion that often proves destructive to the Repose of the Body and Soul. How much more will this be the case, with one subject to so many Troubles, and observed by so many Eyes as I was? I was very sorrowful, though I took care to perform the Tasks allotted to me with so much Solitude and Good-will, that the Esteem of my Employers increased in Proportion with my Work. But it grieved them to see me so dejected; for though it did not appear in my Actions, it would sometimes discover itself in my Countenance. And therefore, on the Arrival of the Day of St. John of June, when the Moors (either in Imitation of the Christians, or for the same Reason that a thousand

other Errors are professed by that Sect,) make the greatest Demonstrations of Joy, with newly-invented Feats exhibited on Horseback and on Foot, the Renegado said to me: “Come with me, not as a Slave, but as a Friend; for I wish you to make merry freely in these Diversions, which are carried on To-day, in Honour of the Prophet Ali, which you call St. John the Baptist’s Day; in order that you may amuse yourself by seeing so many splendid Dresses, Silk Robes, Jewels of Gold and Silver, rich Turbans, Scimitars, and noble Cavaliers poising their Lances, with naked Arms, dyed Black. There you will witness the magnificent Appearance of the Ladies, their Clothes richly adorned with Jewels; and with how much Modesty they smile on their Gallants, shewing themselves at the Windows, and giving them embroidered Handkerchiefs and other Tokens. There you will behold Troops of great Personages

headed by the Viceroy, adorning by their Splendour the Banks of the Sea and Rivers, and how gallantly they manage their Lances; and, after having thrown them, with what Dexterity they take them up from the Ground without dismounting." I listened to all this with a strong Inclination to shed Tears; nor could I contain myself, or dissemble the Pain and Grief which these Rejoicings caused in my Heart. My Master, turning his Eyes towards me, and observing them filled with Tears, said: "How is this, at a Time when all the World is rejoicing, not only among the Moors, but throughout all Christendom; on a Day when every one is near losing his Reason from the Abundance of his Joy; how comes it that I find you wiping the Tears from your Eyes? When it appears that Heaven itself is giving new Demonstrations of Joy, do you celebrate the Day with Weeping? What do you see here to vex you; or rather, which

should not afford you great Satisfaction?" "The Festival," replied I, "is marvellously fine, and joyful in so extreme a Degree, that it brings to my Mind the numberless Times that I have passed it happily in the Court of the greatest Monarch in the World, the King of Spain. I call to mind the Riches and Brilliancy of the Dresses, of the Gold Chains and Jewels that are now shining resplendent on the Persons of such great Princes and Noblemen. I recollect seeing a Duke of Pastrana come forth on one of those Mornings on Horseback, with the Aspect of an Angel rather than a Man, raised up in the Saddle, so as to have the Appearance of a Centaur; and he rode along, saying a great many clever Things, and gaining the Heart of every Woman that beheld him. Also that great Courtier Don Juan de Gavi-
ria, who wearied Horses, and performed Feats worthy of a valiant high-spirited Nobleman. There was one Accomplishment,

viz. that of the Management of a Horse, which he brought to the highest State of Perfection, even in his tender Years. I recollect, too, a Don Luis de Guzman, Marquess of Algava, who made the whole Amphitheatre tremble when he contended with the unbridled Fury of the roaring Bulls; and his Uncle the Marquess of Ardales, Don Juan de Guzman, who was a true Example of Bravery, and the Flower of Chivalry. That great Prince likewise, Don Pedro de Medicis, who, with a Spear in his Hand, would either kill a Bull, or force him to yield; and the Counts of Villamediana, Don Juan de Tassis, Father and Son, who between them would hew a Bull to Pieces with their Swords. I have a confused Recollection, besides, of a great Number of young Noblemen, whose daring Spirit astonished us; who conquered by their Valour and Dexterity, and gained the Affections of all by their Courtesy: and also that, on the

following Day, we had always another Bull-fight :—an Amusement which no other Nation but Spain has adopted ; for all other People consider it excessive Temerity to set at Defiance so ferocious an Animal, which, being enraged, plunges into the Midst of a thousand Men and Horses, Lances, and Spears ; and the more he is wounded, the more furious he becomes. Antiquity never had so dangerous an Amusement as this ; and so bold and high-spirited are the Spaniards, that although wounded by the Bull, they return to the same evident Danger, as well Pedestrians as Horsemen. If I were to recount all the Exploits I have witnessed on similar Occasions, and bring to my Recollection the many illustrious Noblemen who may compare with those I have already named, as well in Valour as in Quality, it would only serve to obscure the Festival of this Day, and all others that are celebrated throughout the World.”

Here the Hermit interrupted me, to ask how it happened that I made no mention of what was done by Don Philip the Beloved, on the Birth of the Prince, our Lord and Master? “Because,” replied I, “it was not my Business to recount, in the Way of Prophecy, Events which had not then occurred. But in truth, *that* was the gayest, richest Festival that ever was beheld by mortal Eyes; when the Grandeur and Prosperity of the Spanish Monarch were universally demonstrated. For as that luxurious Emperor, who caused the Floor on which he walked to be covered with Gold Dust, on going out of his Palace; so this great King, who appeared that Day in the principal Square, might have covered it with the Gold exhibited at the Festival, as with Loads of Sand. And if to magnify the Bravery of Rome, they relate that three Bushels full of Rings of Knights were collected after the Battle of Cannæ; so, with

the Chains, Rings, and Buttons, worn on that Day, I am convinced they might have filled thirty Bushels, without reckoning those which were left at home, in the Houses of private Individuals. The Ambassadors of all the Kings and Republicks were present on this Occasion, in expectation of seeing the Grandees of Spain, and the Flower and Valour of Chivalry, which kept them in Suspense till they appeared, and in a State of Extasy when they beheld the Gallantry with which they exercised their Spears, and their Dexterity in managing their Horses. And although to wound the Bull in the Act of turning one's Horse away, may have a very graceful Effect, as it is practised in other Countries in hunting Lions and other Animals, yet on this Day there was one Horseman, Don Pedro de Barros, who waited at the very Door where the Bull entered, and, with the utmost Fury and Velocity, killed him Face to Face with his

Spear. And though this Gentleman's Courage was so highly conspicuous, yet was he equally possessed of Knowledge and Skill, and taught his Science in a most agreeable Manner.

In short, these Festivals were the Admiration of the Ambassadors and of all that witnessed them; but this Feeling was particularly excited on beholding a young King, Don Philip the Third, (the Beloved,) at the Head of his Troop, presiding with so much Temper, Discretion, and Valour, over the Game of Canes. The Number of Troops and Horses was so considerable, that the Square could not contain them; and from the Confusion this Crowd occasioned, they sometimes neglected the Game: but the matured Prudence of the youthful King set them right again presently; and it really appeared that he was guided by Angels. He was, in fact, the most expert Horseman beheld that Morning in the Square. Since

that Period some great Noblemen, very young, and of much Discretion, have distinguished themselves in the same Way ; such as Don Diego de Silva, a Nobleman of high Valour, Skill, and Grace, and wonderfully intrepid in the use of the Spear ; and his valorous Brother, Don Francisco de Silva, who died a short Time since, serving his King as a most valiant Soldier ; and with him died the many Virtues that adorned him. The Count of Cantillana also, who, with the greatest Bravery imaginable, struck a Bull dead at his Feet with his Spear. And Don Christóval de Gaviria, a most excellent Gentleman ; and many others, concerning whom (not to wander further from my Subject) I shall be silent.”

We beheld at this Festival of the Turks and Moors some very fine Horsemen ; but none so good as Don Luis de Godoy, nor as Don Jorge Morejon, the Alcayde of Ronda, nor the young Count of Olivarez. But the

Scene was very gay and imposing ; and People who are to possess no Glory beyond the present Life, enjoy it without any Alloy.

At the latter End of the Exhibition, I discovered my Mistress and her Daughter, which grieved my Soul ;—not the seeing them, but the not having observed them at an earlier Hour. For my young Lady was straining her Eyes with looking, not at the Amusements, but towards her Father ; for by looking towards him, she could see me. I could not deny myself the Pleasure naturally derived from this Sort of Meetings, and gazed at her by Stealth, proposing to my Master to go ; persuaded that he would reply to me, as in fact he did : “ Let us wait for my Wife and Daughter, and attend them Home.”

They came down from a Window at which they had been posted, and we walked with them. The poor Girl went trembling along,

changing Colour and stammering when she attempted to speak. Her Father said to her: "Don't you see your Physician here? Speak to him, and thank him for the good Health to which he has restored you."

The Mother asked me what I thought of the Festival? "Until I beheld my two Ladies," replied I, "though some of the Exhibitions were very fine, I saw nothing that pleased me; nor have I in all Algiers seen so much Grace and Beauty as adorn the Figures of my Mistress and her Daughter." The Father laughed, but the two Ladies were well satisfied with the Compliment. I found that by thus pleasing the Mother with my Flattery, she made no Objection to my conversing alone with her Daughter. The young Lady asked me to give her a Rosary, with which I was praying. I gave it to her; and, the first Time I had an Opportunity, explained to her the Use of it, and told her that if she would surrender

her Will, in all Truth and Sincerity, to the Virgin, a wide Road would be opened to her, by which she might easily arrive at so great a Benefit as that of receiving the Grace of the Holy Baptism, which the Damsel herself desired with great Earnestness. I added, that I should, from Time to Time, ask an Account from her, of that Rosary ; whether she had preserved it carefully, and had told her Beads on it every Day ; which she promised to do.

CHAP. XIII.

An atrocious Robbery ; and the singular Means employed to detect the Perpetrator.

ABOUT this Period a remarkable Robbery (a Crime punished with the greatest Severity by these People,) occurred at Algiers, which scandalized the whole City, and threw it into Consternation ; the Theft having been committed on the King or Viceroy, and the Article stolen, Money, which he was about to send to the Grand Seignor : after the most diligent Inquiries, they could not by any means suspect or imagine who were the Perpetrators, although a great Favourite of the King had promised a considerable Sum of Money, Exemption from Slavery, or Liberty to whomsoever should discover them. They thought of a Plan by which to come at the Truth, and

this was, to go secretly and without Disturbance into all the Houses, and not to allow an Individual to leave the Place ; but all this availing nothing, my Master said to me : “ If you possess any Secret, by means of which you can make known the Person who committed this Theft, without its being surmised from whom the Discovery comes, I will give you a Sum of Money and your Liberty.” “ Will it not do,” said I, “ to describe the Circumstances in a Letter, and, either signing it or not, to leave it where it will be seen and read ?” “ That is the very Thing,” replied my Master, “ that I want to avoid ; for if it is signed, they will put *him* to Death who wrote it ; and if it is without a Signature, they will begin torturing the whole Town, to discover the Writer : for any Intelligence concerning it, must be necessarily carried, in the first Instance, to the Thief himself, and to no other Person ; the Viceroy’s Favourite being the Man. If

he should find that any free Man had written it, he would have him strangled; if a Slave, he would cause him to be burnt alive. The Information I have received on this Point is very correct, and my Knowledge of the Party and of his Cruelty is of many Years standing; for they tremble here more at the Name of Hazen, than at that of the Viceroy himself: to make this Secret known, therefore, by any ordinary Means, would be attended with very dangerous Consequences; and, though this Man is the greatest Enemy that I and all the Inhabitants have, I dare not myself, nor do I wish you to make the Secret known, for fear of the excessive Mischief that would result from it." " Well, Sir," said I, " let me alone, for I have already hit upon a Plan, by which you shall be revenged of your Enemy, and discover the Theft, without any one suffering by it; only give me Leave to do it in my own Way." He agreed to this;

and I then selected a Thrush which had all the Marks of a good Talker, and, shutting him up in a Cage in my Room, where he could not hear any other Birds to disturb him, I gave up a whole Night and Day to instruct him in saying: "Hazen stole the Money." I took so much Pains with him, and he was so quick at learning, that at the End of a Fortnight, whenever he was hungry, he would say, by way of asking for Food, "Hazen stole the Money:" so that, by degrees, these Words that I had taught him became habitual to him whenever he was hungry or thirsty; for he had now forgotten his natural Note. To make the Matter sure, I kept the Thrush another Week, in order that he might be well grounded in what he had learnt, and I in the Scheme which I had planned; for the Success would be so much more important, as it would set at Liberty above a hundred Men, whom they kept in Confinement on

account of the Robbery, though innocent, and among them were many Captives of Spain, Italy, and other Nations. Seeing then, that my Thrush was to be the Liberator of so many Christian Captives, one Friday, when the King was to go to the Mosque, I took him out and gave him his Liberty, that he might do the same for all the other Prisoners. He flew up to the Top of the Tower, where there were a great many other Thrushes, and in the midst of their unmeaning Notes, began crying as fast as he could: “ Hazén stole the Money! Hazén stole the Money!” nor did he cease repeating it hastily all the Day long, being pleased to find himself at liberty. What the Thrush was saying on the Tower, came to the Ears of the Viceroy. He was astonished; and when the Hour for going to the Mosque arrived, the first Thing he heard was the new Song of my Thrush, who persevered continually in saying: “ Hazén

stole the Money! Hazén stole the Money!" It occurred to him, that since this Affair had been so secret, there might be some Truth in it: for as they are great Augurers, it came into his Head, that the great Mahomet had sent one of those numerous Spirits which he always has about him, to proclaim the Truth of this Story, in order to save the Lives of so many innocent People. But, not to commit himself without Advice as to the Certainty of the Case; he called together certain Augurers and Astrologers, (who were already aware of the Exclamation of the Thrush,) and pressed them to tell him what they thought of it. They gave their Opinion, and, as it coincided with what the Thrush had said, he sent and seized the Favourite, who confessed it on the Rack, and the Money was in consequence found.

He was then disgraced and sent away, highly to the Gratification of the whole

City, who hated him thoroughly, not only on account of this wicked Deed, but because many bad Actions of his which had hitherto been concealed, now came to Light. Indeed the Blame of all the bad Offices done to them by the Viceroy, were now laid to the Favourite's Charge: for Persons elevated to high Stations, are exposed to this Misery;—Envy either throws them down from their lofty Seats, or else discredits their Reputation; and thus Favourites, on attaining the Greatness they desire, and the Love and Favour of their King, are apt immediately to think how they shall secure what they have acquired; gaining Credit to themselves, while they benefit their Country.

A modern Statesman, quoting from some of a more ancient Date, remarks that a Prince ought never to give himself up to the Will of a Favourite; that is, he should never make so much of him, as to trust him with his Conscience, and the Regulation of

his Actions. But this is a Doctrine contrary to Nature itself; for as every private Individual wishes to possess a Friend with whom he may unbend his Mind, and lessen his Cares by communicating them, why should a Prince be deprived of this Consolation, which all other People enjoy? A valiant, prudent, and just Prince will necessarily have about him Favourites of irreproachable Lives, for if they are not so, he will either get rid of them, or they will destroy his Reputation : but that the Opinions of the Prince should be received with general Applause, as just and holy, while they seek Occasion of Blame in every Act of the Favourite, is a Conduct influenced by discontented, ill-disposed Minds, who regard his Elevation and Increase of Wealth with Envy, because they cannot attain it themselves.

I should conceive, that in an opulent Monarchy, like that of Spain, the Crumbs

which fall from the Prince's Table are more than sufficient, not only to improve noble Houses already established, but to raise others from the most profound Misery to the highest Prosperity. Great Monarchs, Kings, and Princes, are born subject to the common Laws of Nature, and to the Passions of Love and Hatred; and they must naturally find Friends towards whom they incline, (for the Stars are powerful in making Men incline more to one Friend than to another): but when these Friendships are only chosen by one Party, they have not that Zest, nor do they afford that mutual Satisfaction produced by such as are established among Equals. But though the Station of Princes is so superiour, they should not select a Favourite by the Judgment of a third Person, but by their own; and having done this, their Choice will accord with that of their Subjects, whose Happiness depends on the well-regulated Judgment of their Prince;

and, as the People of Spain are protected by two guardian Angels, and the Heart of their King is in the Hand of the Lord, they have especial Reason to think that their Governors will be disposed to act for the publick Good. It is unreasonable to expect that the Favourites of great Monarchs can bear all their former Acquaintances in mind: it is very well if they do so in the Case of those who take pains to remind them of their former Friendships. For instance, Persons of my Condition have no Reason to complain of the Favourite; because whatever Advantages they may obtain, must spring from their own Pains and Industry, and if they are deficient in these, the Complaint is most unjust. There are two Kinds of Favourites; one, which from humble Beginnings gain the good Opinion of their Prince; and these desire to ingross all the good Things to themselves: the other Kind, noble Lords, who being born to their

high Station, have always been well received and beloved by their King; and these wish to divide the good Things among all who deserve them. But both one and the other Kind should act towards their King, as the Ivy does by the Tree to which it clings: for though it grows up in its Embraces, without ever leaving it, yet it never injures the Fruit which is the natural Production of the Tree.

But to return to the first Part of my Subject: I maintain it to be a cruel Thing in these Statesmen to think of depriving a Prince of so great a Satisfaction as that of the Friendship of a Favourite, to which he naturally inclines; it being well known that the Will of all Human Beings is ever at work, and more desirous to attain this Object than any other, because in the Blessing of Friendship the Mind acquires Consolation and Repose.

CHAP. XIII.

the Squire regains his Liberty—An Account of his Voyage.

ACCIDENT sometimes offers Subjects to our Attention which divert it from the Object under Consideration, as has happened to me with this Digression; leaving my own History, and treating of Affairs that came in my Way, as Nature dictated, on their being brought to my Recollection.

Having succeeded in my Stratagem, by the Assistance of the Thrush, my Master kept his Word, after the Viceroy had fulfilled *his*; for he admired the Wisdom of the Renegado's Conduct in the Affair, by which he saved the Lives of so many Persons who had been wrongfully accused, and restored them to their Families.

He gave me my Freedom with the greatest

Good-will, though sorely against the Will of his Daughter, who, I already found, was strongly inclined towards the true Religion, and her Brother also, whom I convinced of the Truth; so that they were both very anxious for Baptism, though their Father pretended not to observe it, if he did suspect it: but, notwithstanding his Silence on the Subject, no doubt he was desirous of it secretly. The Boy was named Mustapha, and the Girl Alima; though afterwards, when I could freely communicate with her, and lead her into the Catholick Truth, she took the Name of Mary. I was very glad to find an Opportunity of talking with her alone, but not on Subjects of Love, for I never willingly offended in this respect; and finally I assured her, that on my Arrival in Spain, I would endeavour by every possible Means to make her acquainted with my Situation; and would give her Advice as to what would be best for her to do in order

to become a Christian, as she desired. Melting into Tenderness more from thinking of this her principal Object, than on my Account, she let fall some Tears of Christian Piety, and some yielded to honest Love ; and, this being the last Time that I was to converse with her, I took my Leave of her, for that was all the Consolation I could now offer, and she, after kissing several Times the Rosary I had given her, promised me that she would keep it for ever.

My Master afterwards said to me, with great Marks of Affection: “ Obregon, I cannot fail to keep my Word with thee, because thou hast deserved it, and from the Obligation I am under to do it as a Spaniard, as well as from the Remains of Baptism which I still retain, (and he looked all round to observe that no one was listening), and which indeed I have quite engraven on my Heart. For there is not one amongst all you see in Algiers, (of the Moors I am speaking), who

would keep their Faith or their Word with thee, nor would be thankful for what thou hast done. And if the Viceroy of Algiers thanked me, and fulfilled the Promise which he had made to any one who should discover the Thief, it is because he was the Son of Christian Parents, in whose Country, Truth and one's Word are inviolably guarded: while here, in this barbarous Nation, they say, that to keep one's Word is the Conduct of Tradesmen, and not of Gentlemen. And although I fulfil mine with thee, I do it against my Will: for as long as you were here, I was glad to indulge in conversing on Subjects respecting which I must in future be silent. But now that it is fixed for thee to go, and thou hast no Wish to remain in Algiers, as I had planned it, I will carry thee myself to Spain in my Galliot, and leave thee where thou mayest with Liberty return to thy Religion. Now is the Time when all the Corsair Vessels go out, and I

shall part from the rest to leave thee in one of the Islands nearest to Spain ; for I dare not go farther West, seeing that they are very vigilant in looking out for me on all that Coast, as I have been very notorious for the Mischief I have done there : and if the Galleon in which thou wert, had not met with a favourable Wind, you would all have been brought hither.”

My Master prepared in Haste for his Voyage, taking with him some very valiant Turks, who were accustomed to Piracy : and, making choice of favourable Weather, he turned the Prow towards the Belearic Islands, leaving his Wife and Daughter on the Beach, full of Grief ; the one recommending him to the Care of the great Prophet, and the other calling aloud, and very disconsolately, on the Virgin Mary ; for as there was no one by to reprove her, she spoke as she felt. I continued to fix my Eyes on the City, praying to God that I might one Day

return to it, when it should belong to Christians. For, as I left the better Part of me there, though free, I went on grieving at the Thought of having left among a Set of Rascals like these, a Pledge, which I would have redeemed with the Blood of my Heart, since she desired herself to profit by that of Christ. For though I knew that I left her very well satisfied and confident in my good Intentions, I still carried a War within me, which would not let me recur to any Thing but the Thought that accused me to myself of being cruel and unhappy, blaming me for going away, and for leaving a Christian Soul amongst Moorish Bodies. But yet I felt a Sort of Confidence that I should one Day or other see her again as a Christian.

We sailed on with a most favourable Wind; and as my Master saw me turn my Face towards the City, he said to me: “Obregon, it appears to me, that you continue looking towards Algiers, and throwing out your

Curses upon it, from having seen so many Christian Captives there; and for this Reason you give the Name to this City of Robber, or Cave of Robbers. But I assure you, it is not always the Corsairs who do the most Mischief; for they do not venture out without great Risk, and sometimes they go for Wool, and get a Shearing. But the worst is that, finding they are well received in Algiers, many Persons resort thither voluntarily, bringing with them their Arms from all the opposite Kingdoms to Africa,* either from the Desire of Liberty, Want of kind Treatment at Home, or from bad Inclinations, and having the Means of Conveyance at hand. It is lamentable to see that, for these Reasons, this City is full of Christians from the West and from the East; and

* The Original has it, *from* the Frontiers of Africa : but as it seems to refer to the Emigration of Christians from Europe, I have altered *from* to *to*, in order to preserve the Consistency of the Passage. *Tr.*

although I am going to do Mischief on their Coasts, for my own Advantage, I cannot refrain from regretting the Injuries sustained by baptized Blood; and the Thought of it even pierces my Heart." "I have perceived," said I, "on former Occasions, that you have been affected by Reflections of this Kind, like a Man of a compassionate Heart, and of noble Blood; but I do not see that these good Feelings are accompanied by a Change of Religion, nor even by an *Intention* of returning to the inviolable Faith of St. Peter, which was professed by your Ancestors." "I do not mean to tell thee," replied my Master, "that the Regard I have for my Property, the Nobility of Freedom which I now enjoy, the Ties of Wife and Children, nor the many Injuries which I have done my native Country, induce me to turn towards this Subject. But I will ask thee if at any Time I have been curious to ascertain what Doctrine thou hast been teaching my

Children : for by that mayest thou discern how deeply rooted the Faith is in my Breast. And I assure thee, that of all the Renegadoes thou hast seen, even the most powerful, rich in Slaves and in Property, there is not one of them but knows that he lives in Error. But the great Liberty they enjoy, and the Honours and Riches to which they are preferred before all Turks and Moors, detain them in the Country, where they become leading Men, ordering what and whom they please ; yet they are still inwardly conscious of the Truth. And as a Proof of it, while this favourable Breeze continues its grateful Influence, I will recount to thee an Incident which occurred some little Time since in Algiers.

“ There is a Turk there, of great Wealth and abounding in Slaves, venturous at Sea, and well experienced on Shore ; his Name is Mami Reys. He is a Man of bold Determination, of a good Figure, liberal, and well

esteemed. This Man, being out privateering on the Coast of Valencia, had sailed for some Days without taking a Prize; till, at length, his Provisions failed him. Their great Necessity induced him and his Companions to land, with much Risk and Danger to their Persons; and, Torches being lighted all along the Coast, they became so much alarmed, that they fled back to the Water, discharging their Pieces at those who were sent to oppose them. In their great Haste they left on Shore the Chief of the Galliot and one Soldier, his Friend (a very valiant Man), who, seeing that it was all over with them, went into a Mill, where they found no one but a most beautiful Girl; extreme Terror having prevented her from running away with the rest of the People. They made menacing Signs to her, not to cry out; and afterwards, on finding the Coast clear, hoisted Signals which were understood by the People in the Galliot; and on its becom-

ing dark, they ran the Vessel in near the Mill, carried off the Captain and his Companion, and with them the captive Damsel, before the adverse Party could collect again, to attack them. The Beauty of the Maid was so exquisite, that they said, and with Truth, that such a Jewel, both for Person and Face, had never before been seen in Algiers. The Captain-Proprietor of the Galliot said, that he valued that Prize more than if he had succeeded in sacking all Valencia. She continued full of Grief and Lamentation, while he endeavoured to console her, telling her that she should not be unhappy at such good Fortune, for that she was to be Mistress of all the Property she beheld, and of another, greater and much more valuable, and not to be a Slave as she apprehended. But the Beauty and Mildness of her Countenance, accompanied with a Sort of tranquil Gravity, produced, they say, such an Effect, that at Night it gave Light to all the Vessel.

and the People on Board bowed, and humbled themselves before her, as if she had been a Divinity; wondering how Valencia could produce any Thing so lovely. She was consoled during the Voyage by the Turk, who spoke a little Spanish, and was a good sort of Man, of noble Appearance, bold, and fortunate, and successful in all the Enterprises he had undertaken; rich in Land, Jewels, and Money, and in high Favour with all the Kings of Algiers. To shorten my Story, he did not disembark at the City, but at a Country House of his, a very agreeable Spot, ornamented with Vines and Gardens. She, on seeing herself obeyed by so many Slaves, and Friends of the Turk, appeared as if she was beginning to relent, and to recover from the Sorrow her Captivity had occasioned. In Time she came to like her Master very well, and married him, leaving her true Religion for that of her Husband, in which she lived six or

seven Years in the greatest Content; being beloved, served, adorned with Jewels and Pearls, and having apparently lost all Recollection of having been a Christian. They had every Day, for her Amusement, most joyous Festivities of *Canes* and other Games. And her Disposition shewed itself so strongly in her Countenance, which was so much more beautiful than any other in Algiers, that if he had not made haste to marry her they would have taken her from him to send her to the Grand Seigneur. But living in the midst of such Idolatry, she became the Rule by which all were guided. There was a Minorquin Slave there, a good kind of Man; and he, like the rest, had Opportunities of conversing with her. His Ransom arrived, and the good Man going to take leave of her, she asked him where he meant to reside; and when he told her, she desired he would give great Attention to what might happen. He, who was not dull,

understood what she meant, and, returning to Minorca, lived there as she had advised, until she found Means to send him a Letter, in which she desired that he would come over in a *well-armed* Brig, and reach, at the Midnight of such a Day, her Husband's Country House. As the Period had arrived when all the Corsairs go out from Algiers, her Husband armed his Galliot with three hundred choice Slaves, dressed in the Spanish Costume, and set out on his Adventure, ploughing the Waves in very gallant Style ; his Wife observing him, and making a great many Signals from a Tower at the Top of his House. The Weather was very sultry, and the appointed Day drew near. She pretended to be much afflicted by the Absence of her Husband, and oppressed by the Heat ; and told her Slaves and People, that to soothe her Mind she would retire to her Country House and Gardens ; and, as she intended to remain there some Length of

Time, she carried with her some Trunks, in which were Clothes, Jewels, and Money, and all the Riches in Gold and Silver that she could find in the House. She stayed there some Days, regaling herself, and her Slaves and Women, so much, that if they were fond of her before, they now began to adore her. The appointed Night arrived, without her having discovered the Secret to any Body, and she had kept it with so much Prudence that her Resolution was not even surmised. Placing herself at the Window, she waited till twelve o'Clock at Night, without sleeping or closing her Eyes ;—when she discovered some Object approaching from the Sea. She made the Signal agreed on in the Letter, and the Gentleman hastening towards her, said : ‘ Come, for the Brig is ready.’ Then the determined Lady spoke thus, with all possible Brevity, to her Slaves : ‘ Brothers and Friends, purchased with the Blood of Jesus Christ! my Determination is this;—

let him who wishes for his Liberty, follow me to Spain.' A great Soldier Captive, a native of Malaga, replying in the Name of all the others, said: 'Lady, we are all resolved to obey your Commands. But observe to what Danger you expose yourself and us; for the Watch Towers have already given the Alarm, and by Day-break the Sea will swarm with Galliot, which no doubt will chase us.' To which she replied: 'He who put this into my Heart, will conduct me safely away; and if this should not happen, I prefer being the Food of the most horrible Sea Monsters in the profound Abysses and Caverns of the Sea, (dying a Christian), than to be Queen in Algiers, and an Enemy of the Religion that our Ancestors professed.'—And this most beauteous Woman, acting the Part of a valiant Captain, encouraged the Slaves so effectually, that they immediately took up the Trunks and all the Riches, and carried them down to the Brig, after having dis-

patched a Negro Woman and two young Turks, who were beginning to cry out. The Slaves (who were now become free) having united themselves to the Crew of the Brig, all honourable Men and of good Courage, they assisted one another so much, that the Brig flew across the Water by the Force of the Rowing and of the Wind, which was favourable. On their knowing the Circumstance in Algiers, which they did presently, they sent out forty or fifty Galliot's after her, each of them carrying a Centinel in the Top, and another at the Yard-arm; for they thought to fall in immediately with the Brig. But it appears that God either guided it, or made it invisible; for, besides the Pursuit of these, her Husband Mami Reys was cruising among those Islands, and neither the one nor the other Party fell in with her, until at Day-break she found herself between the two Galliot's of her Husband, who, in order that he might go in Shore with

Safety, had dressed his People like Spaniards. The Lady, with great Presence of Mind and Sagacity, gave Orders that the Crew of the Brig and all the Slaves should disguise themselves as Turks, that they might run away under a Supposition that they were pursued by Spaniards. This Stratagem was very clever and cunning; for Mami Reys observing that they fled from him, was rejoiced at it, saying: ‘Without doubt we appear so much like Spaniards, that yonder Turkish Brig flies from us.’ And they celebrated with great Merriment, the Flight of the Brig, which by means of this Deceit escaped and arrived in Spain, where the Lady remains, very rich and happy, giving great Alms from the Property of her Husband.—You already know the Object I had in relating this Story, which happened but a short Time ago; and I believe there is no Doubt but that the Religion first professed by a Man (I speak of those who have

been baptized) remains indelibly engraved on his Heart: and it appears that this Female possessed in a peculiar Degree, an heroick Courage and christian Determination." "I am not astonished," said I, " that this Lady should have evinced so determined a Valour, for it is like Women to put in Execution what they take in their Heads; nor that she should have surpassed Men in Boldness; nor that she should have imagined a Scheme by which to accomplish her Design; for all this was the natural Result of her Inclination. But what astonishes me is, that she should have been capable of keeping the Secret so long. For it is much more difficult for a Woman to keep a Secret, than to preserve her Chastity; as not one among them is without a Friend to whom she communicates every Thing, past, present, and in her Intention. The only Chance of Success was to confine it close within her own Breast, because the Means were seemingly

wanting that so arduous a Case required ;— no less than setting at defiance her Husband, the Corsairs, and all Algiers, together with the Waves and Storms of the Mediterranean. This, however, was not so great an Exploit as the not revealing so momentous a Secret.”

“ This is all true,” rejoined my Master : “ but there is still one Part of the Story that appears like a Contradiction ; and it is that this Damsel had not Courage enough to fly from the Mill with the rest, at the Time she was taken, though she was bold enough afterwards to undertake so heroick an Enterprise.”

“ To this,” I replied, “ there is a ready Answer : for when this Lady was a Maid, with the natural Coldness they have, (for they are almost all alike in this Respect,) Fear took such Possession of her Limbs and the Veins of her Body, that she was unable to run away, or even to move from her Place. But afterwards, when she married, her Blood was set in Motion, her

Nature improved, and she plucked up sufficient Spirit to undertake and succeed in this difficult Enterprize. Of all the Women famous in ancient Story, one does not know that any were Maids; nor has one Reason to suppose it." "But the Amazons," said my Master, "do not they say of them that they were Maids?" "No, Sir," "they do not; but if they were, they went out to Battle, exercising themselves, not in idle Occupations, nor in spinning of Wool, but in hunting wild Beasts, in riding on Horseback, using Lances, Bows, and Darts; and, in order to make themselves more ferocious, they were accustomed to feed on Tortoises and Lizards; and at the proper Age, they had Intercourse with the Men of the neighbouring Countries. If from this Connection they produced a Son, they either killed or disabled him, so that he could no longer act the Part of a Man. But if a Female was born, that there might be no

Impediment to her using the Bow, they dried up, or cut off the right Breast; which is the Cause of their being called Amazons : i. e. *sine Ubera*. But not one of these ever achieved so much as this Valencian Lady.”

CHAP. XIV.

*Treated as a Renegado Captain, but shortly followed
by a happy Reverse.*

WHILE the Slaves and Ship's Company continued reposing, my Master and I had Time to discuss this and other Matters, by which we conquered Sleep. We indulged, however, for a short Time, and, about two Hours after we awoke, discovered the Balearic Islands—Majorca, Minorca, and Iviça, and the other small Islands. But we did not venture to approach Majorca till Night, on account of the great Watchfulness observed by the Inhabitants; and even then we found it necessary to make haste; for if they had perceived us, we should have found it difficult to reach it at all. We went towards Majorca, as thinking it the best, though it proved to be the worst for him: for, on doubling a Point of a Rock, there

was a Centinel there who gave Notice to the Genoese Gallies, which stretched out to take my Master ; and though the Night was drawing near, they began to row with great Fury towards us. My Master seeing that he was on the Point of being captured, went on Board the other Galliot, taking with him the choice Men of both Crews, and leaving the Vessel in which I remained, under my Charge, in hopes that, as I spoke Spanish well, I should be able to answer them so as to get his Galliot off. Thus he left me as an Obstacle, that they might make a Prize of me, while he was making his Escape. It happened as he expected : for as he was very crafty, and well acquainted with all that Coast, he did not stretch out to Sea, but sailed towards the Island, and as it was now nearly Night, he went hiding himself from Creek to Creek, until it grew dark, when he put out to Sea and escaped. The Galliot in which I was, having but very few

People to row, and those the worst of the two Crews, we remained so stationary, that the Gallies got near enough to fire a Gun over us, as a Signal that we should surrender. We stopped our Course, and on arriving close, I cried out in a loud Voice, and in very clear Spanish, that we *had* surrendered. "Aye! it is you whom we seek," said the People of the Gallies; calling me by a thousand opprobrious Names. For, in fact, as this was the Galliot my Master always went in, and I spoke good Spanish, they took me for the Renegado. They sent all the *rascally* Turks they found with me to the Oars; and as for me, thinking that they had at last found *him* of whom they had been so long in search, they handcuffed me, in order to carry me to Genoa, where they intended to make a terrible Example of me. The Captain of the principal Galley said to me: "How many Times, Dog Renegado, have you escaped with your Life? but this

Time you shall not go unpunished.” “Take Notice, Sir,” said I, “that I am not the Renegado whom you suppose me to be; but a poor Spanish Slave of his.” For this Defence, they loaded me with so many Blows of their Cudgels, that they forced me to exclaim: “*They say* that Genoa is a Hill without Wood; but I know that it has produced Wood enough for me just now.” Two Spanish Musicians whom the General had on Board, laughed at my Reply, and more at the Patience with which I bore the Beating. I knew one of these two Men very well, and among the Crew there was also some Laughter, on account of what one of the Musicians had repeated to them. I retired handcuffed into a Corner, and gave Thanks for having so frequently found myself exercised in Troubles and Miseries. For Miseries bring to our Minds the Mercies of God, but not the Sins which occasion them. I recollect now the *Misfortunes* which have befallen me from my

Infancy, but I do not call to Mind the *Sins* of my Youth. I remember how much Good I have done to certain Persons in the Course of my Life, and that many Evils have befallen me, by means of these very People. For God selects such Instruments, for the Confusion and Punishment of Sins, committed either through Ignorance or Wickedness. Here am I now under the Character of a Renegado, handcuffed and unjustly aggrieved, in the Place of a crafty bedevil'd Man ;—an excommunicated Reprobate. But if I choose to cast my Eyes back, I shall discover that I merit this and much greater Chastisements at the Hand of God. A scoundrel of a Boatswain now came up, and giving me some Blows with a Bull's Pizzle, said to me: “ What is this Dog muttering between his Teeth ? ” I remained silent, lest he should repeat his Blows. Signor Marcelo Doria, who was the commanding General on Board, moved with Compassion,

ordered that they should not use me ill, until they had ascertained who I was. As I saw the Door open to Pity, I said : “ Since it is usual to grant every one the Indulgence of a Defence, I entreat your Excellency, that it may in this Instance be afforded to me ; for I know that, as soon as your Excellency is satisfied who I am, I shall not only not suffer whilst in the Hands of so great a Prince, but I trust in God that I shall be more honoured than I deserve. I will bring forward Witnesses in Genoa, and even some in this Galley, who were acquainted with me at the Court of His Catholick Majesty, at the Time when this Renegado was going about ravaging all these Coasts ; and one of them is Don Julio Spinola, the Ambassador.” He made them take off my Fetters, and conversed with me, inquiring all that he wished to know respecting the Renegado. I told him of the crafty Trick by which he had made his

Escape, which satisfied His Excellency in some measure with me, and threw great Blame upon those who had not followed the Renegado. I returned to my Corner, though no longer handcuffed, and sat down sorrowfully, with my Elbows on my Knees, and my Face on my Hands, that the Musician might not discover me; and there I continued meditating on a thousand past Circumstances.

They continued their Course towards Genoa, (knowing that they would soon have Notice in Algiers that the Genoese Gallies were cruizing about the Coast), and passed the Gulf of Lyons in a Gale of Wind: but having crossed it from Point to Point, the General ordered that the Musicians should sing, and taking their Guitars, the first Thing they sung was a Stanza of mine, which they glossed in these Words: "What is good is doubtful; what is bad is secure and certain." The Treble, whose Name was Francisco

de la Peña, began to make some excellent Shakes in his Throat ; for as the Air was slow, it afforded *him* a good Opportunity of doing so ; and *me* of sighing at the End of every Verse. They sang all the Verses ; and when they came to the last Line, which says, “What is good is doubtful ; what is bad is sure and certain ;” I could contain myself no longer, but exclaimed by a natural Impulse, “This Misfortune is still mine !” As this was uttered in a loud Voice, La Peña looked at me ; for as my Face and Clothes were so disguised, and he was near-sighted, he had not observed me before ; but, on seeing and knowing me, he embraced me without being able to speak, and his Eyes overflowing with Tears. He then went to the General, and exclaimed : “Whom does your Excellency think we have here ?” “Whom ?” said the General. “The Author of this Sonata,” replied La Peña ; “and of all those we have been in the habit of

singing to your Excellency." "You do not say so?" said the General; "call him hither." I approached his Excellency with a modest Demeanour, but with a bold Heart, and on his inquiring my Name, I replied: "Marcos de Obregon." La Peña, a Man who always professed Truth and Virtue, went up to the General, and said to him: "—— is his proper Name; but as his Condition is so low at present, he is willing to conceal it." The General was astonished at seeing one of whom he had heard so much, in so bad a State, surrounded with so many Troubles, and so unjustly fettered. He inquired of me the Cause of this, and I related all that had happened to me, with much Patience and Humility; for the Galleon of the Duke of Medina had brought up in the Road of Genoa. He treated me with great Kindness, particularly in supplying me with Clothes. And on arriving at Genoa, I visited Julio de Spinola the Am-

bassador, whose Friendship I had enjoyed at the Court of Spain; and Marcelo Doria being satisfied of this Truth, they both did me the Favour to accommodate me with Money and Horses to Milan. But in the first instance I was desirous to see that Republic, so rich in Money, and Antiquity, in Nobility and most ancient Families, Descendants from Emperors and great Lords, and from the first Nobility in Italy; such as the Dorias, Spinolas, Adornos, of which most noble Family there is a Branch at Xeres de la Frontera, connected with great Spanish Noblemen, and recognised among the Knights of Calatrava, and other Orders; for instance, Don Agustin Adorno, as virtuous a Nobleman as he is conspicuous. But as my Design was not to remain there, I disposed myself to pursue my Journey to Milan; for which Place I had left Spain.

HISTORY

OF THE

SQUIRE MARCOS DE OBREGON.

PART THIRD.

BOOK III.

Containing the Squire's Adventures on the Road towards Milan.

I, WHO, from having been so lately a Captive and an ill-used Slave, now suddenly found myself possessed of Money, Liberty, and good Clothes, desired most ardently to arrive where my Friends might see me free, and might learn from me the alternate Afflictions and Favours with which Fortune had visited me. And therefore, after viewing the Magnificence of that Republick, and taking the Repose necessary after a Life of so much Fatigue, I got together my Beasts and my

Victorino, (or Lad to take care of them), and directing my Course towards Milan, ascended the Hills of Genoa, which are as craggy and as elevated as those of Ronda. Having already passed by Saint Pedro de Arenas, and Night having set in, in consequence of the great Quantity of Stones and the considerable Fall of Water, we lost our Way, in a Part of the Road where we might easily have been precipitated down to the Rivers below, then greatly swelled by an Inundation, which was rushing down to give additional Fury to the Sea; for the Brooks, which were increased by the Hail and Rain, were more than sufficient for this. We saw no Light but through the Eyes of the Horse that guided us. A Horse is the worst Beast in the World to travel; but they use them in Italy; and as he was little inclined to go on, he would stop and lean against every Tree we fell in with, or throw himself down whenever he thought proper.

So that I alighted, and among some Trees which had large Trunks and many Branches twisted together, we sat down to rest ourselves, either till the Tempest should cease, or we should discover some Light to guide us to a Place of Safety. The Victorino, though accustomed to the Road, was so alarmed, that he had lost the Remembrance of our Track, and I, all Hopes of being able to move from thence before Morning. The Water ran down us in Buckets-full for a long Time, and we could not avail ourselves of the Shelter from the Trunks of the Trees, as more Rain ran down from them, than from us, which altogether rendered the tempestuous Weather insufferable. In this State of Suspense, we heard some one near us say: "Take care of your Life." As the Sound appeared close, I looked about me among the Branches, and observed a Light behind the Trees, which issued from three Houses, where the Horse had probably stop-

ped before, and had now, though by a bad enough Road, guided us thither. The Distance was short, and running along, we found ourselves in one of the Houses in an Instant, the People coming out with great Attention, to offer us Lodging. And where we did not expect to find even Water, we found some fine Capons; for all foreign Nations have this Advantage over Spain, in their Inns and Accommodation for Travellers. We made a very good Supper; and on my asking for a Jug of Water, they brought it me from a Fountain which rose close to the House, quite lukewarm: I made them put it in a Window; and although the Weather was not so cold, the Storm and the Hail had changed it, and in an Instant the Jar of Water became cold, and even frozen. I drank it; and the Host brought in two Witnesses from the other Houses, and on seeing me drink another Jar of cold Water, he said to them: "Gentlemen, this is the Reason of my bringing

you in hither, that if this Spanish Gentleman should die from drinking these two Jars of cold Water, they may not have it to say that I killed him." I laughed at this, supposing that he had said it from disliking Water, or from being a great Drinker of Wine. However, this was not the Case, but for the Reason which the Host afterwards assigned. I asked, as a Stranger in Italy; why he objected to a Man's drinking Water, who had all his Life been accustomed to it? He replied, that the Waters of Spain were lighter, and more easy of Digestion, than those of Italy, which possess more Humidity.* And one may imagine that, as People of so much Discretion as the Italians do not dare to drink it alone, there must be something bad in it. I knew an Italian Nobleman who, when he first came to Spain, had never drunk a Drop of Water, and while he re-

* This is a literal Translation of the Spanish Word, *Humedad*. Tr.

mained there he never tasted Wine; for, Water being either from Rivers or from Fountains, it takes the good or bad Quality of the Ground or Minerals through which it passes. That of Spain (as that Country is so favoured by the Sun, and the Humidity is consumed by the Violence of the Heat,) is most excellent. Besides that, it generally passes through Gold Mineral, as appears in the Sierra Bermeja; for the Sierra itself is of the same Colour, and the Water there is remarkably good; or else it passes through Mines of Silver, and is then also very excellent; such as that in the Sierra Morena; as is proved by the Water of Quadalcanal; or through Mines of Iron, as in Biscay, where it is very wholesome. And consequently there is no bad Water in Spain, either of Rivers or Fountains; for Lake, Pond, or Stagnant Water, there is none, nor would they drink it if they had it. As if, however, to proclaim the Greatness of

God's Mercy, there is a Lake of more than a League in Extent, near Antequera, from which they every Year make Salt, and close beside it, there is the best and most wholesome Water in the known World. They call this "the Stone Fountain," because it has the Power of dissolving Stone. And in Ronda there is another little Fountain (of the Nuns) which rises towards the East, on a Hill; and on drinking it immediately on its springing out, it will dissolve *the Stone*, and turn it into Sand the same Day. Of this Fountain one might write a very large Volume. But that which the Landlord told me was true; for all the Time I remained in Lombardy, which was more than three Years, I did not enjoy good Health, nor was I ever free from a constant Pain in my Head, from the Water I drank; and this was proved the following Day of my Journey, for in all the little Puddles which had been formed from the Rain, there were small

Animals, such as little Toads and Frogs, and other Reptiles, which had been engendered in that short Space of Time, by the great and mischievous Humidity of the Soil; and in those Ditches of Milan, one sees Heaps of Snakes engendered by the Slime, the Putrefaction of the Water, and greasy Humidity of the Earth.

CHAP. I.

An unfortunate Accident, attended by serious Consequences.

BUT quitting this Subject; we went travelling on, my Boy and I, until we met some Farmers, who, on being asked where we should find the Road which we had missed the preceding Night, gave us a wrong Direction, that we might lose more of our Time. The Lad understood the Joke, and told them that he knew they were deceiving him; but as I did not choose to consider it a Joke, I began abusing them in bad Italian, while they, who were numerous, loaded themselves with Stones. I got off my Horse, and gave one of them a Stab with my Knife. The Lad taking my Horse, rode off, and left me amongst them, for, as he was one of their Countrymen, he did not

wish to be brought forward as a Witness in the Business. They seized hold of me, (for I had slipped and fallen,) and tying my Hands together, they conveyed me to the nearest Town, which was a very large populous Place. They shewed the Blood of their Comrade's Wound, and a large Chain and heavy Fetters were put upon me: for this once I had not so much Ground for complaining of my ill Fortune as of my little Consideration; having done that in a Foreign Country, which I should not have ventured to have done in my own; for Spaniards, when away from Home, would fain persuade themselves they are absolute Masters. I, who had nobody to whom, nor of whom to complain, turned against myself the Stones that my Adversaries might throw against me. I saw myself loaded with Irons, (which was not the Case at Algiers among the Enemies of the Faith, and of those who professed it,) without being able

to turn my Eyes towards any one who would behold me with Kindness; for, the same Reason which induces us to think that we are Masters of the World, makes us abhorred by all. He that goes into foreign Lands, is in Duty bound to enter them with great Caution; for neither are the Laws nor the Customs similar, nor can they be expected to preserve Friendships where there is but slight Acquaintance; and it is an acknowledged Fact, that although Kingdoms and Republicks preserve the Respect and Friendship which they profess one for another, it is not the same with Individuals, who are apt to have Enmities one against the other, and so much the more in proportion as they find themselves slighted.

I discovered that Patience is a current Virtue suited to all Cases that can occur; but particularly when one has to deal with People with whom we can hold little Converse. A Foreigner is bound to be very

affable in Society, and well-bred; and until he attains a perfect Knowledge of those Customs to which he had previously been a Stranger, he should be continually on his Guard, shew a cheerful Countenance, and bridle his Anger.

I found myself in a most afflicting State, not knowing a Person to whom I might communicate my Distress. I overheard them, outside the Prison, calling me an *excommunicated Wretch*; and the most honourable Sentence they adjudged me, was that of being strangled secretly. The Gaoler appeared a good sort of Man enough; but I could not think of any Scheme by means of which to derive Consolation from him. While I was ruminating on what Scheme to adopt, it occurred to me, that, as this Nation is esteemed remarkably covetous, some Advantage might be derived from that Quarter. I had some Crowns in my Pocket, which I had brought from

Genoa: there were two very fine Boys, Sons of the Gaoler, running about the House, and recollecting with how favourable an Eye Parents are apt to regard those who shew Kindness to their Children, I gave each of the Boys a Crown. The Father was so much pleased and gratified at this, that I had Hopes of succeeding in the Plan which I had projected. He observed to me: “ You ought to be very rich, Sir.” “ What makes you think so?” said I. “ Your Liberality,” replied he, “ in giving to these *Boys*, what is hardly known to *Men* in this Part of the World.” “ If,” said I, “ you think so much of this small Sum, what will you do when you know more?” And taking out more Money, I gave it to him, saying: “ As you appear to me a sensible Man, I wish to apprize you who I am, that you may not be longer surprised at a Trifle of this Sort. I have acquired that which all the Philosophers have been so

long in search of, and have not yet found :— but in the first place, you must swear that you will never discover who I am.” This he did with the utmost possible Solemnity ; and then intreated me with the greatest Anxiety to tell him what more I had to communicate;—and I replied : “ I know how to make the Philosopher’s Stone, which converts Iron into Gold ; and by means of this, I have always as much Gold as I have need of : but I have not dared to communicate this Secret to any one at Genoa, lest the Government should have stopped me in my Journey, which they undoubtedly would have done ; for as this divine Invention is so coveted and sought after by all, every one is eager to learn it ; and if they hear that any one knows it, either Kings or Republicks detain him against his Will, in order that he should exercise his Art for them at his Cost ; for by having too great a Quantity of Gold in the World, it will

come to be held in little Estimation.” “ I have heard this Matter treated of very often, Sir,” said the Gaoler, “ but I have never seen nor heard speak of any one who has attained this Art in our Times : for although your Lordship sees me in this Situation, which I hold in order to remain quiet and maintain my Family ; yet I have been in Spain, where I served an Ambassador of Genoa, and, as Fortune would have, it am now returned to this Place, where I was born.” “ I am delighted at this,” said I ; “ for seeing that you are discreet, and that you have heard this Matter discussed before, you will give Credit to what you shall behold with your Eyes.” “ If I could only learn this Secret,” replied he, “ I should be a happy Fellow indeed ; for I should command all in my Town, and I would let your Lordship go free to whatever Part you might choose.” “ As to the first Point,” said I, “ I must explain that the making it

consists in one particular Point, and great Care is requisite to secure it : I dare not, therefore, teach it to you ; but I will leave you so well provided with Gold, that neither you nor your Sons will ever have need of more. And as to the second Point, I do not desire that you should do any Thing for me which may be productive of bad Consequences to you hereafter : for this same Chemical Art of mine, will give me the means of setting myself at Liberty ; and this I will instruct you in, with the greatest Readiness possible, so that you shall see, though blind, how, without any Fault, or Consent of yours, I will set myself free, and you remain without Reproach, and with Abundance of Riches and Satisfaction into the Bargain.” He threw himself at my Feet with a thousand Grimaces, taking off my Chains and Fetters, while I seemed to prevent him with great Earnestness ; but, letting the Night pass over, in order to make

the Matter more secure, I said to him: “ You must know that the not having arrived at a Certainty with respect to the Transmutation of Metals, arises from not having understood the great Philosophers, who treat most ably of this Subject; such as Arnaldo de Villa Nueva, Raymundo Lulio, and Gebor, a Moor by Nation, and many other Authors who have written in Cypher, that their Writings might not be common to the Ignorant: for, in order to make myself thoroughly acquainted with the Truth, I have passed over to Fez, in Africa, and have been at Constantinople, and in Germany; and, by communicating with the greatest Philosophers, I have arrived at the Discovery of the Truth, which consists in reducing to the original Matter, a Metal so untractable and hard as Iron; which on being reduced to its first Principle, if in that State one applies to it those same

Things and Simples which are applied by Nature in forming the Gold, the Iron is transformed into that Metal. In the same Manner as all Creatures imitate, as much as they can, the most perfect of their own Species; so Iron, and the other Metals, go on imitating the most perfect, which is Gold, and partaking of its Qualities; and Nature, with the Assistance of the great Generator, (which is the Sun,) changes it into Gold. And this may be done by means of certain strong, corrosive Salts, observing at the same Time the Aspects of the Planets, with which I am perfectly acquainted; and that you may have some Proof of what I tell you, take this Night a Piece of an old Horse-shoe, which has been much worn and is full of Rust, and break it into small Pieces, or, filing it, put the Particles into an earthen Pot, with very strong Vinegar, over a slow Fire, and

you shall see the Result." He fulfilled my Directions very completely, and left me to repose that Night, very well pleased with the good Effect which I found my Stratagem would have towards delivering me from Prison.

CHAP. II.

Marcos, to regain his Liberty, puts in practice a clever Stratagem.

IN the Morning, the Gaoler came to me with great Satisfaction in his Countenance, telling me that he discovered the Iron to be changing to a red Colour, like that of Gold; for his Avarice was turning his Brain. “Now,” said I, “you will be convinced that I have told you the Truth;” and I gave him Money to purchase certain Articles of a corrosive and poisonous Nature, (which I do not particularize, as it is not my Wish to teach bad Practices); adding a few other Things to these, I made some Powders, which, in addition to those in the Pot, gave them a very agreeable red Colour. Having made such Powders and Mixtures as I had need of, I said to two Fellows in

the same Prison, who were condemned to the Gallies : “ The Gallies are in Genoa ; going thither, then, would be to hasten your Doom ; but if you will venture to conduct me in one Night to the Territory of *the King*, I will deliver you quietly from this Prison, and without Disturbance from within or without.” They replied with great Determination : “ We will carry your Lordship even on our Shoulders, and before Day-break you shall be safe amongst Spanish Soldiers.” “ Well,” said I, “ be it so ; be you attentive to-morrow Night ; and when you see me with the Keys in my Hand, recollect what we have to do.” The poor Fellows rejoiced greatly, and were earnestly desirous for the Arrival of the destined Hour. In the Morning, I desired the Gaoler to get some Crucibles, and as many old Horse-shoes as he could collect, for that I meant to convert them all into Gold ; and that at Night, when all the Pri-

son should be in Silence, he should kindle a Charcoal Fire, without having any Witness who might afterwards denounce us. He set about it in such good Earnest, that he did not leave a Blacksmith's Shop, or Dunghill, unsearched, and at Night produced as many old Shoes as would have brought him a good round Sum, if sold by the Pound. He shut up his Servants and his Prisoners, and my two Friends pretended to be asleep. Lighting his Fire, and all being perfectly still, I took out my Powders, and shewing them to him, they appeared to him like Gold itself. "Only observe," said I, "what a fine rich Smell they have," shaking some of them into his Hand. He put them up to his Nose to smell, and I immediately gave his Hand a Blow underneath, which threw the Powder up into his Eyes, and he immediately fell down flat, without Sense, or the Power of Speech. I took the Keys from him; and the two Galley-slaves seeing how Matters

stood, hastened to me. I opened the Gates, while the poor Man lay in this miserable State; and, without being observed by any one, we got clear of the Prison and of the Town; and by Morning, having passed some Woods and Sierras, and some difficult Obstacles, I found myself in Alexandria de la Palla, amongst Spanish Soldiers, who were on Guard at the Palace of Don Rodrigo de Toledo, the Governor of the Place. It appeared to the two Galley-slaves as if their Freedom had come from Heaven; and they set to work to secure themselves a Livelihood.

I rejoiced in my Soul at the happy Issue of my Scheme; for though it was done at the Cost of the poor Gaoler, one may do any Thing to regain one's Liberty. In this Instance I was like the Devil, who tempts Men according to the weak Side he perceives in them.

The Gaoler guided by his Avarice, and I

by my Wish of Liberty, acted admirably in Concert ; but Avarice is so predominant in those Breasts which possess it, that it reduces them to the lowest Instances of Weakness. The Advantages we fail to obtain by our Merits or Intreaties, may be gained without Difficulty, and to the Satisfaction of both Parties, by attacking the Possessors through their Avarice. Avarice shews its yellow Visage, and the Hardness of Breasts of Iron becomes softened. What Fortresses have surrendered ; what Loyalty has been shaken ; what Treaties broken ; what Chastity corrupted ; and all the Effect of Avarice ! All the other Vices by which Men are enchained, leave them in some Degree at liberty to consider the Future, except Lasciviousness and Avarice, which cramp and obscure the Powers of Reason.

It is more easy to restrain the Fury of a Madman by Punishment, than to appease the insatiable Thirst of Covetousness by

Counsel. The Avaricious Man is like a Sponge, which, though it sucks up all the Water it can contain, is still dissatisfied ; and they are as keen in their unreasonable Pursuits as a hungry Adder, which attacks every Thing that comes in its Way, though it be a Toad, swallowing it greedily, and thus filling itself with Venom. They pay no Regard to what is lawful or unlawful ; but to fatten themselves, gorge all they can, till Punishment follows the Indulgence of their inordinate Desires : like this miserable Gaoler ; who, wishing to see his House filled with Gold, remained without Eyes to see it all.

CHAP. III.

More surprising Adventures.

I SET out for Milan, fearing, in the midst of my anxious Desire to arrive there, that some Misfortune might befall me; for the Unfortunate ought always to live with Care, considering what may, from what is wont to happen to them. There is a River, called Eltanar, which runs through Alexandria; and I observed, as we passed by, some portable wooden Water-mills floating on it, which must, I think, have Wheels within, by means of which they move. But, as I had nothing to do with them, I did not think of making the Inquiry; and having waited for the Boat to cross the Po, (a magnificent River after its Junction with the Eltanar,) we got into it, together with some poor Women who were travelling the same Way; and it happened, when we reached the Mid-

dle of the River, that one of those Mills, being badly secured, was driven down the Current of the Eltanar, and came with such Force against our Boat as to upset it. My Horse, for these Animals are bold in swimming, dashed in, and I seized hold of his Tail; the Women catching hold of my Skirts, and Victorino of theirs; and, sometimes sinking, sometimes rising, and occasionally touching the Sand with our Feet, we reached the Bank, which the Horse ascended, trying to shake us off. But I did not let go my Hold, till I found myself firmly established on dry Land. There we met a Number of People of different Countries, who had crossed over in another Boat; French, Germans, Italians, and Spaniards; and, that we might understand each other, we all spoke Latin. But the Pronunciation of one differed so much from another, that although every one of the Party spoke good Latin, we did not understand each other. And this set me reflecting on the extraor-

dinary Circumstance that, even in the same Language, which is prevalent all over Europe, the Punishment of the Tower of Babel should still be manifest.

On our arriving at the famous University of Pavia, the Governor was pleased to receive me favourably; but as I wished to reach Milan, I did not choose to lose Time till I found myself in that wonderful City, which has produced so many great Saints, and continues so to do, in the Prelates of that most excellent Cathedral. He who presided over it at that Time, was the most holy Cardinal Carlos Borromeo, now *Saint Carlos*; for his Life was so good, that they canonized him a few Years after his Death.*

I arrived there when they were celebrating the Funeral Obsequies of the most holy Queen Doña Ana de Austria; and having

* A flattering Tribute to the Memory of Borromeo, is given in a late Description of Switzerland, in speaking of Ascona, where a colossal Statue is erected to him. *Vide Yosey's Description of Switzerland, 1815.*

considered to whom they could entrust the composing of the History, and Verses, of the exemplary Life of so great a Lady, though many able Men might have been selected for this Office, the Magistracy of Milan was pleased to assign the Execution of it to the Author of this Book:—not that they considered him better qualified for the Task, but more zealous to serve his King, and to approve himself worthy of so important a Charge. Having then, in the first Instance, cast their Attention on Anibal de Tolentino, a most excellent Person, who would have performed the Task better than any other Individual in Europe, they fixed at last on the Author, as being on the Spot. I heard a Sermon during these Obsequies, preached by the blessed Saint Carlos, the Style of which was quite in conformity to his Life.

I found my Friends very well satisfied, and astonished at the Facility with which I had effected my Escape; and being very

desirous to know how it happened, they made me relate the Circumstances over and over again : for, in truth, Misfortunes related in Prosperity, or soon after our Escape from them, afford peculiar Satisfaction. Afflictions may be said to resemble Medlars ; for when they have most Force, they are harsh, and rough to the Taste ; but afterwards when their true Season is come, the Harshness they possessed wears off, and they attain a soft Mellowness. They are like a Man too, who, finding himself in Danger of being drowned in a River, continually endeavours to keep his Head above Water, and makes all the Efforts possible to escape ; but after he has got out, he drinks of that same Water which had previously done its best to destroy him. The outside Coat of the Chesnut pricks one's Fingers in touching it : but one afterwards derives much Pleasure from eating the Fruit.

I was delighted at beholding the Magnificence, Fertility, and Abundance of Milan :

for I believe that, in these Respects, there are few Cities in Europe equal to it; though from the great Humidity of which it partakes, arising either from the four artificial Canals by which it is supplied with Provisions, or from the natural Dampness of the Place, I always found myself suffering from violent Pains in the Head; a Complaint to which I have always been subject, but which troubled me more while I remained in that City. Three Things indeed have always persecuted me; Ignorance, Envy, and Bashfulness: but those I suffered from, here, lasted till my Arrival in Spain. I spent three Years in Milan, like a Man who lies in Bed counting the Beams of his Roof* two or three hundred Times over, without doing any Thing of the least Importance; in the first place from being constantly indisposed,

* It is still generally the Custom in the Peninsula to leave the Beams that support the Brick Floors exposed to view. *Tr.*

and in the next, from the little Inclination that Soldiers have to exercise themselves in Works of Ingenuity. I had a great Desire to visit Turin; and for my Sins this Desire came upon me in the Month of December, a Season in which there are no Roads, but Rivers in lieu of them; for as the Weather was fine when I set out, I flattered myself that it would continue so all the Way. But on arriving at Bufalores, the Heavens began to discharge themselves, not of Rain, but of continual Torrents of Water, which caused us to lose all Trace of a Road. I arrived at Turin; and having encountered the Floods at my Arrival, I remained there two Months in Company with another Spaniard; but the Fogs were so thick, the People ran against each other in the Streets without being able to discern what was before them; these Fogs arising, as they say there, from its Neighbourhood to the Po, which passes close to the City, besides several Brooks

which run through it. The Guadalquivier, however, where it passes by Seville, is a finer River than the Po; and sometimes it overflows so much, as to water the greater Part of the City, while all the Country of *Tablada* is converted by it into a navigable Sea: yet I have seen there no such Fogs as I have described above. And Granada has two Rivers which overflow it, besides many Brooks which pass through the Streets, without producing any such dismal Fogs. But—dropping this Subject, the other Spaniard and I put up at an Inn, where I found myself in the greatest Danger, and experienced the most fortunate Escape that ever occurred, or probably ever will occur to me in all my Life. There were a great many People at Dinner in the House; and while my Companion and I were waiting till they had finished, that we might take their Places, an elderly Man, towards fifty Years of Age, all at once began talking about “*the re-*

formed Religion;” and this he repeated several Times. Though a Native of Geneva, he spoke good Italian; and, observing that we were Spaniards, he seemed to raise his Voice more than was necessary; and after their several Toasts, they uttered Heresies fit only for People full of Wine. My Companion advised me not to take any Notice of this; but they continued drinking the Healths of their Leaders, and frequently made mention again of “the new and *reformed Religion*; so that at last they forced me to inquire what Religion that was of which they spoke, and who it was that had reformed it? They replied, “that it was the Religion of Jesus Christ, and that Martin Luther and John Calvin were the Men who had reformed it.” Before I could hear any Thing more, I said to them: “A happy Chance must that Religion have, which could be reformed by two such great Hereticks!” The whole House was immediately

up in Arms, and they fell upon the other Spaniard and me in such Numbers, with their Knives, that if we had not found our Way to the Staircase, they would presently have cut us in Pieces. The Landlady prevented the Affair proceeding further, telling them to take care what they were about, for we had been lodged there by the Duke. The Disturbance was quieted by this Means, for hitherto they had not refused Obedience to the Duke of Savoy, although they had to the Church of Rome.

After the Tumult had subsided, the old Man said to me: "Why do you give the Appellation of Hereticks to two such holy Men, who have persuaded so many to adopt their Opinions?" "Because," replied I, "you call holy and Reformers of the Religion of Jesus Christ, two Men, who in all and every Part of their Lives and Habits acted in Contradiction to the Doctrine of Jesus Christ and his Gospel; being Men

of libertine, vicious Lives; Evil-speakers, Cheats, Deceivers, Disturbers of Society, and Enemies of the publick Peace." The old Man shewed a Disposition to be noisy again; but the Fear and Respect that he owed the Duk erecurring to his Mind, he contented himself with saying, by way of a Finish: "Many are called, but few are chosen; and *we* are those few." I said to him in Reply: "You had better have said, Many are the taken, but few the called, because they do not fall into the Hands of the Pope." An extraordinary Circumstance! that there should be Persons so far removed from the natural Order of Things, that, merely for the sake of Licentiousness and Idleness, they should forsake the *true Path*, though they know and feel it inwardly to be so!— And that there should be powerful Men to favour their Errors so effectually, that both the one and the other attain their Ends:— the powerful by saying that they follow the

Doctrine of wise Men, and the others by boasting of the Support afforded them by powerful Princes. As if they were excused by this, for so many Vices and Abominations as they commit under the Cloak of Liberty, and in which their Masters make them live! In these unfortunate Opinions of theirs, there are some Circumstances so ridiculous, that one cannot avoid seeing how determined they are to continue in Error.

CHAP. IV.

The Squire falls in with a Necromancer, but proves himself the more cunning of the two.

I RETURNED from Turin to Milan;—for although I intended to go into Flanders, I did not find a convenient Opportunity; besides this, I knew that the Troops in Flanders were on their March towards Lombardy, and I had been with the same Men in Flanders, at the general Assault of Maestricht, where a comical Adventure befell me, which might have been attended with disagreeable Consequences. It was that, during the Sacking of the Place, I got Possession of the finest Horse that there was in one of the principal Houses, and mounting it without a Saddle, (for in such Times one is not very particular), on my leaving the City, more than three hundred

Horses followed me; for that which I had taken, proved to be a Mare; and if I had not thrown myself off on the Ground, I should have been but roughly handled by her Admirers.

At length I returned alone to Milan; for my Companion went into Flanders, and, being in search of some convenient Mode of travelling, I fell in with a Carriage in which I was forced to take a Seat, among four Natives of Geneva, as great Hereticks as the others. I determined not to oppose them in any Opinions that they might think proper to advance; by which Means I gained their Good-will so completely, that although they were great Enemies to Spaniards, they treated me all the Way, exclaiming frequently that I was an excellent Companion. For in truth, when they do not converse on Religious Subjects, they are a very inoffensive affable People to deal with. They continued treating me as we went along the

Road, until we arrived between two Branches of the Tesin, where they went aside, out of the Road, towards a Grove on a Hill; telling me that they were going to visit a Conjuror, to question him concerning some Secrets of much Importance. Being a young Man, and a Friend to Novelty, I was delighted at the Thoughts of seeing something worth Notice.

We went on a little Way through the Grove, until we reached the Foot of the Hill, where we discovered the Mouth of a Cave, with a Door of rough Wood, fastened in the Inside. They knocked, and a surly deep Voice, with something of a Tone of Importance, answered from within. The Door was opened, and the Figure of the Conjuror presented itself, dressed in a brown russety Mantle, painted all over with Snakes and Celestial Signs. He wore on his Head a large Fur Cap of Wolf Skin, and other Things about him to correspond with

it, which made his Person appear horrible, like the Place and the House which he inhabited. The Geneva Gentlemen addressed him, informing him of the Cause of their Visit, and that the great Celebrity of his Character had induced them to consult him on a Point of much Importance. In the first Instance he refused to give any Opinion on the Matter, but at last they prevailed on him by Intreaties and Presents; for these are apt to soften every one, and incline him to receive our Petitions. While they were conversing together, I had an Opportunity of examining the Inside of the Cave, which was crowded with Things that excited Fear and Astonishment; — such as Heads of Dæmons, Lions, Tigers, Fauns, and Centaurs, and other Things of this Kind, to fill those who entered with Horror; some of them being painted, and others made to imitate the real Forms: by all which he wished it to be understood that he carried

on a Communication and Friendship with some evil Spirit. He talked to them for a long Time, extolling his great Power, and shewing them several Jewels which had been given to him by various great Lords and others, on account of the many Secrets he had revealed to them. When they came to talk of their own Business, as he observed that I was occupied in looking at the Contents of the Cave, he inquired why I did not join in the Conversation? They told him that I was a Spaniard. The Conjurer replied, that he did not choose to discover his Secrets before Spaniards, because they were an incredulous, sharp-witted People. To which the others replied: "You may do any Thing you please before him: for, though a Spaniard, he is an honest Fellow and a good Companion. He resolved, on this, to act, and called to him an Assistant of so fierce and formidable an Aspect, that he appeared to me like some Dæmon. We went into

the Place where he kept his familiar Spirit, which was a small Room still more dark and gloomy than the other Part of the Cave. In the Middle of this small Room was a sort of Reading-desk, surrounded by a Balustrade, and a Glass Globe was placed upon it, having an Alphabet of large Letters, written round it; and in the Interior of the Globe was placed the Familiar, who was a little Man of the Colour of Iron, with his right Arm raised, pointing towards the Letters. There was something really terrific in all this. He addressed the Figure in a long Harangue, in which he reminded him of the Friendship that had subsisted between them for so many Years, to induce him to reply with more Readiness to the Questions he was going to put to him. He then put on a large Pair of Gloves, and having proposed his Question, he raised his right Hand, saying: "Quick, begone." The Familiar turned round, and pointed at a

Letter. The Conjuror then took off his Glove, and wrote down the Letter which the Figure had pointed out. He put on his Glove again, und raising his Hand once more, said to him : “ Forward.” The Familiar turned again, and pointed to another Letter : and in this Way he went on questioning him till he had written down ten or twelve Letters, the Figure continuing to reply much to the Satisfaction of the Genevese. As I perceived that he took off his Glove to write down each Letter, saying what it was to be ; though I suspected that it would cause a great Hubbub amongst them, when he was about to raise his Hand again with the Glove on, I seized hold of the fore Finger, and feeling something hard, asked him whether that was not a Loadstone? He remained covered with Shame and Confusion ; and, turning towards the others, said : “ Was I not right in saying that the Spaniards are acute, and that I did not

wish to exhibit before them?" The Secret of the Business was, that the little Gentleman was composed of some very light Materials, and his Arm of Steel; and on the Conjuror dexterously pointing out the Letter which he wanted, he contrived to draw the Figure towards it, by means of the Loadstone. The Genevese were astonished as well at the Dexterity with which the Conjuror had deceived the People, as at my Discovery of his Secret; though I perceived at first that they were vexed that the Prognostics could not be verified, according to the Replies of the Familiar, whom they had considered a Dæmon.* They afterwards admired the Subtlety with which he contrived to deceive his Visitors, but the

* I took a young Spaniard lately to see the Indian Juglers in London, and asking him afterwards what he thought of the Exhibition, he said he had no Doubt but they had Dealings with the Devil—for he had known Instances in Spain, of the same Sort of Connection; nor could any Thing I said convince him of the contrary. *Tr.*

Necromancer requested them to ask me not to make known the Imposition by which, without doing Harm to any one, he gained his Livelihood, and the Reputation of a great Philosopher. The Invention was certainly most ingenious, and very conformable to Natural Philosophy ; and it might be endured as a Leger-de-main Trick. But it is not reasonable that Things so repugnant to Truth, and to the ordinary Course of Events, Deceits so well known, should be tolerated. We took our Departure, leaving the Impostor very disconsolate, and my Companions much chagrined. They found fault with me for having offended him, and discouraged him from proceeding in his Impostures. I asked them whether they had not rejoiced at seeing this Secret exposed? They answered in the Affirmative. “ Well,” said I, “ in like Manner would all others rejoice who should be acquainted with the Fact. And it is of much less Consequence

that this Fellow should lose his Trade and the publick Confidence, than that so extensive and pernicious an Evil as this should be permitted to exist. To confess the Truth, I have always entertained a very bad Opinion of these People; such as Conjurers, Astrologers, and the like; though I consider the Astrologers as the worst, as they are better received in Society, and speak less Truth. But those who treat of true *Astronomy*, and the Motions of the Heavenly Bodies, are learned Men, well founded in the Mathematicks:—such as Clavio Romano, Doctor Arias de Loyola, and Doctor Sedillo, all Spaniards, and great Men in their Profession. But these other People are Impostors, Men of little Solidity, (of whose Tricks one might relate many Stories): for of a hundred Things they predict, they err in ninety, and when they happen to be right, it is merely by Accident. They employ Women, who come to ask them their For-

tunes, as they do to Gypsies ; and, in short, they are a contemptible Set of People, who end as miserably as the Alchymists, by wishing to discover Secrets which God thinks fit to reserve to himself. With these and similar Conversations, we arrived at Bufalora, a Town in the State of Milan, where my Companions took another Direction, and I continued my Journey.

CHAP. V.

Containing a Discourse on Musick, and the Commencement of a most marvellous Adventure.

HAVING returned to Milan ; I found that as that Republick is abundant in all the Necessaries of Life, so is it also in well-informed Men, and in the Science of Musick, in which Don Antonio de Lodoña, President of that Magistracy, was very well skilled. In his House, there was always a good Concert of excellent Musicians, famous for good Voices and skilful Performance ; and there one heard of all the eminent Men in this Science. The Violin, the Organ, Harp, and Lute, were touched with great Skill by capital Performers on all those Instruments. They propounded Questions relative to the Use of this Science ; not carrying it, however, to such an extreme of Perfection as in these Days at the House

of the Master Clavijo, where Assemblies of the purest and choicest of this divine, though ill-rewarded Art, have been collected together. Concerts were also held in the Garden of the Licentiate Gaspar de Torres, who indeed could strike the Chords himself with Taste and Science, accompanying the Lute with most beautiful Passages of the Voice and Throat, and arriving at the extremest Perfection that can be attained. There were many other Persons very worthy of being mentioned. But to listen to this same Master Clavijo on the Organ, his Daughter Doña Bernardina on the Harp, and Lucas de Matos on the Lute of seven Strings, one imitating the other, in most solemn and uncommon Movements, is the finest Thing that I ever heard in my Life. The young Lady (who is now a Nun in the Convent of St. Domingo the Royal) is a Wonder of Nature on the Organ and the Harp.

But, to return to my former Subject : one Day when they had finished singing and playing, every Body being silent, some one asked, why Musick had not then the same Effect which it is said to have produced in ancient Times ; amazing the Souls of the Hearers, and changing them till their Imaginations adopted the very Ideas of the Singers ; as in the Case of Alexander the Great, who, while they were singing the Wars of Troy to him, started up with great Fury, and drawing his Sword, began to lay about him in the Air, as if he had been actually present in the War itself. On this I remarked : “ The same Effect may be now, and is sometimes produced.” The other replied, that the Harmonick Instrument had been lost, it had not been possible to do it. “ It appears to me,” said I, “ that with the Harmonick Instrument it was impossible to do it : for as the Excellence of this Kind of Musick consists in the Division of Semitones and

Diesis, the Human Voice cannot obey so many Semitones and Dieses as that Kind contains. And thus that Prince of Musick, the Abbot Salinas, who revived it, only left it in one Instrument that had Keys, as it appeared to him that it was with the greatest Labour and Difficulty the Human Voice could accompany it. I saw him play on the Organ that he left at Salamanca, on which he performed Wonders in the way of Execution; but I did not see him bring it to that Sort of Pitch that the Human Voice could execute, although there were in the Choir of Salamanca at that Time great Singers both with respect to Voice and Skill; and that great Composer, Juan Navarro, was Master. It may also be effected by the Diatonick and Chromatick Kinds; and if they have all the Circumstances and Requisites that the Case requires, the same will happen every Day. The Requisites are, that the *Expressions* should possess ex-

cellent and pointed Images, with Language of the same Cast; and in the next place that the Musick should be the Child of these same Ideas, which they mean to unfold. The third Requisite is, that the Singer should possess Spirit and Genius, with Fancy and Taste to execute it. The fourth is, that the Hearer should have his Mind and Taste disposed to attend to it. Things being thus arranged, Musick will perform Wonders. I am Witness that one Night, when two excellent Musicians were singing a Song, in which were these Words, "It breaks the Veins of the ardent Breast," so great was the Emotion and Tremour it excited in a Gentleman who had brought them thither to sing, that the Lady being in a retired Corner of the Window, he drew out his Dagger, and said to her: "You see here the Instrument; let me intreat of you to plunge it into this unfortunate Breast!" The Musicians, as well as the Author of the

Words and Musick, remained astonished: for, in this Instance, all the Requisites described above, concurred to produce the Effect. The Audience were not displeased at this Circumstance, for they were all thoroughly skilled in the Science.

In this and similar Occupations, I passed my Life, between Poets and Soldiers; the latter being exercised, not only with the Pike and Musket, but also with the Sword and the Dagger, the Shield and the Target. Among them were some valiant, skilful, and courageous Characters, particularly Carranza; though there were those who gave the Preference to Don Luis Pacheco da Narvaez. For in the true Philosophy and Mathematicks of this Art, and in demonstrating the Methods of inflicting Wounds, he surpasses every one past and present.

In this and the like laudable Amusements, I passed my Time in Lombardy, though my Health continued always indifferent, on

account of the Humidity of the Climate. So that I determined to return into Spain, after seeing Venice; and I had soon an Opportunity afforded me, for at that Time the Infantry and Cavalry of the State of Milan were departing, for the Purpose of receiving the Empress on the Venetian Territory, and of convoying her to embark at Genoa. This gallant Band set out, and continued their March until they arrived at Crimea, where they received her Imperial Majesty in the Style due to so great a Personage. On arriving there, with a View to fulfil my Intention, I crossed the River with the Baggage Horses, (which I had hitherto made use of, free of Expence) telling the young Man who had Charge of them, that I would pay him for the Rest of the Way to Venice. But he managed Matters so well, that he left me in the Lurch, at the first Inn we came to, which was in a small Town, where I could not provide myself with any

Beast whatever; nor could I get a decent Answer from any of the People, because I was a Spaniard, and in the Dress of a Soldier; so that neither my Humility, my modest Demeanour, nor my Patience, availed to prevent my journeying on Foot, without a Companion, through an unknown Country, ill disposed towards my Countrymen. I went trudging over a plain Country, and it was with a bad Grace I could get the People as I went along even to tell me whether I was following the right Road. Having travelled all Day sufficiently disconsolate, without knowing whether I could turn for a Night's Lodging, the Sun having now set, I espied a Gentleman crossing the Road, with a Falcon on his Fist. On observing me, he stopped till I should come up with him, which was not for some little Time; for I moved slowly along, as one sorrowful and afflicted.

On my approaching him, he shewed Signs

of Compassion, and inquired whether I was a Spanish Soldier. I answered in the Affirmative ; and he told me that, as it was a long Way to any Publick House, it would be better for me to follow him to a Shooting Box of his, where I should remain till Morning. I followed, though with some Suspicion : but calling to Mind that People of Condition are always inclined to conduct themselves well, and that Truth and Compassion are imprinted on their Hearts, I got rid of the Sensation of Fear, which in different Sort of Company might not have been superfluous.

CHAP. VI.

The marvellous Tale continued.

WE entered by some large Gardens close to the House, but badly cultivated and full of Weeds. As soon as we arrived at the House, some Servants of sad and gloomy Aspect came out to receive us.

We entered an Edifice which, though of large Dimensions, was quite unadorned with every Thing that could give Satisfaction to the Sight; having nothing but old black Hangings, the Servants appearing melancholy and mute, and all the House full of Mourning and Sorrow. I was in a State of Suspense and Amazement at beholding a House so full of Horror and Want of Comfort; nor did I feel in Security, but, on the contrary, suspicious lest some Mischief should befall me. My Host had the Ap-

pearance of a Man whose Heart-strings were broken. He gave no Orders to his Servants by Word of Mouth, but communicated all his Wishes by the Expression of his Countenance, which, though furious, was lean and emaciated. They called me to Supper, for which I was very well inclined, though, as I said before, I was somewhat suspicious, from my usual bad Fortune, of something happening. I remained as mute during Supper as my Entertainer, who sat opposite to me; for I never was more inclined to preserve Silence, because I was on the Look-out for some Reverse, from the Reserve kept up by my Companion. I did not venture to put any Questions to him: for the true Way to keep well with People, is to transform one-self into the Humour of those with whom one associates; and as we cannot know the Secret of another's Heart, all we can do is to wait till some Accident induces them to unfold it; since it is wrong to pry into

Things which others do not choose to communicate, especially with great People, whose Will is governed by Power and Inclination. At length, when Supper was over, and the Servants had been dismissed, in a deep Voice that seemed to proceed from his very Entrails, he addressed me thus: “Happy they who are born without any particular Duties to perform; for they may pass through good or bad Fortune, free from any great Uneasiness or Care, in Matters that give the greatest Concern to others, with which they have nothing to do. The poor Soldier, after having performed the Task allotted to him, may lie down on his Bed and rest. Officers of the Revenue, and all that Class of People, having fulfilled their Duties, find Repose in Relaxation. But there are those who, observed by many Eyes, respected by many People, approved of apparently by many Judgments, subject to the Murmurs of many Tongues, cannot

attain the Summit of their Obligations. I feel desirous, Soldier, to unburthen my Mind to you, by giving you some Account of my lamentable Distress: not but what there are those here, to whom I might open my Heart; but I do not care to communicate on the Subject with Persons so immediately on the Spot, who would be apt to renew it every Day, and who would think all of me, and misinterpret my Sorrows. I assure you that there is not one of these Servants who is acquainted with the Cause of my Grief; for although you observe them so downcast, they know no more than what they read in my Countenance. I am a Gentleman, who have my Vassals, and Property sufficient to enable me to live at ease, (if Property can be made to produce this Effect,) performing the Duties imposed by my Situation. I was inclined, from my Birth, not to Courts, or the Bustle of great Societies, which dissipates and trifles Life

away ; but to Solitude, passing my Time in Field Sports, such as Agriculture, cultivating Gardens, Fishing, Hunting, and Hawking ; in which Exercises I have spent some Years, and my annual Income, with great Pleasure ; and have performed some good Works towards Pilgrims and Travellers. I passed a great Part of my Youth without marrying ; considering a Wife as a heavy Burthen, and a great Obstacle to my Field Sports. But as the Changes of this World are unavoidable, and Heaven disposes of our Lives in various Ways, changing them from good to bad, and from bad to worse, or the contrary ; it happened one Day that as I was going to hawk with my Falcon in one Hand, and a Heart, with which I was feeding him, in the other, *my Heart* was seized all of a sudden, and an Idea imprinted on it, which has not till now, nor will it ever be, obliterated. The Story was this : As I was passing within Sight of

Crema, there appeared in one of the narrow Lanes among the Gardens, one of the most beautiful and majestick Faces that has ever been seen in mortal Form. I shewed an Inclination to follow her; but she immediately shut herself up in one of the Gardens. Astonished at such extraordinary and unheard-of Beauty, I informed myself with great Care of her Condition, Birth, and Disposition; and after having made every Inquiry, I learnt that she was a modest Virgin, the Daughter of humble Parents. It appeared to me that it would not be difficult to gain her by means of Presents and Promises, which are sufficient to subdue the hardest Rocks. I visited her by means of some Ladies, who do not object to use their Ministry on these Occasions, and to promote Friendships amongst those who make them Presents. They went in a Coach, under Pretence of seeing the Gardens; but with all the Batteries that they

established, they could never overcome the Resistance made by her modest Chastity. Having arrived at such an Extremity that I could not longer endure the Violence of my Fate, I went in the Carriage with the Ladies, disguised in one of their Dresses; for as I was young and smooth-faced, there did not appear much Difference between us. On finding myself in their Company, and near the Mistress of my Heart, the Flame was kindled anew, by the Enchantment of her most flattering Expressions, pronounced in my Favour, when she remarked: ‘Those who bring with them such an amiable beautiful Lady, must know how to attain greater Excellencies than those possessed by a poor humble Worm.’ These Words, and the beholding under that humble Garb, so much Purity and Neatness, so much Good-humour, accompanied by a modest Gravity of Demeanour, and such an honourable Resistance, together with a thousand other good

Qualities which shone resplendent in her, forced me to resort to the last of Remedies, which was to ask her for my Wife: and, to shorten so lamentable a History, I married her, and retired with her to this Hunting Box, where we lived together with so much Love and Satisfaction on her Side as well as mine, that we never had a Difference that lasted an Hour. Whenever I went out to hunt, I found her, at my Return, weeping and full of Anxiety and Melancholy; which delighted my Soul, and increased my Love for her, as for a divine Being. Six Years were passed in this delightful State, which might well be envied by all Descriptions of People. Indeed the Happiness was so complete, that nothing but the Ingratitude of a black-hearted, low-born Wretch could have effected a Change in such an auspicious Commencement. There was in this Neighbourhood, a little Man of no Quality, but of good Understanding, and agreeable; for he

knew something of Musick, and a little of Poetry. He valued himself on being a Man of Valour; but in the Place where he lived he was not esteemed, nor had much Respect shewn him. I brought him to my House as a Guardian of my Person, and Companion of my leisure Moments. I clothed him, fed him at my Table, and he became the second Person in my House; in short, I raised him from the Dust of the Earth to the respectable Situation of my Equal. Before and after my Marriage he used to accompany me in my Field Sports, mounted on a Poney; and if he became weary, he would return Home. After I was married, he availed himself of these Opportunities to converse with my Wife, of which I had not the least Suspicion; for he was a little Man with very bad Features, wide Teeth, large Hands, deficient in moral Virtues, and inclined to Detraction and Dissension. However, though he was a Person

of this Description, I did not think it right to allow him to return from Hunting until I went Home myself; more from a Wish to comply with the Customs of the World, than from any bad Opinion I entertained of him. After I had subjected him to this Privation for some little Time, a Hobgoblin made his Appearance in my Garden every Night, on my Return, which alarmed the Dogs and terrified all the Servants. Though fatigued with my Day's Sport, I used to go out, and hunt about in every Hole and Corner of the Garden, before I went to Bed, in hopes of discovering the Ghost. And on quitting my Room, my Wife was in the habit of getting up and locking the Door on the Inside, taking care not to open it till she was convinced that it was I who knocked; for she pretended that it was Fear of the Ghost which induced her to lock it in the Inside. This State of Things lasted many Days, and even some Months: but I re-

marked that on the Nights of the few Days when he left me during our Sport, no Ghost appeared ; nor could I imagine where he concealed himself, until one Evening, having returned from the Chace, I desired a Servant to remain at the Garden-gate, and keep a good Look-out for the Ghost ; and, shutting myself up in my Room with my Wife, I waited to see whether he would come again as before, when the Dogs began barking violently ; for the Ghost was so tall, that he reached to the Window, and even to the Roof. I arose as fast as possible, and meeting the Servant whom I left at the Garden-gate, he said to me : ‘ Do not trouble yourself, Sir, any more about this Affair, for the Ghost is no other than Cornelio your intimate Friend, who practises this Deceit, that, while you are out, he may remain with my Mistress, acting treacherously towards you : How, or by what Way he enters, I cannot guess, unless it is that some Dæmon

assists him ; but I know it to be the Case' and so it has been for several Days past. So great was the Fury I felt within, that seizing him by the Collar of his Doublet, I stabbed him to the Heart, with my Knife ; exclaiming : 'Why have you not carried this News to some one else? and why do you bring it to me after the Deed is done? I threw the Body into a little Cellar, locking the House and Garden Doors with the Master-key ; and, quieting myself against my Conscience, with my Breast and Heart burning with Jealousy and Dishonour, I walked up and down for a Time in order to obtain Relief to my agitated Feelings. At length I knocked at my Wife's Door, and she asked in great Dismay whether I was the Ghost? At last, when she was satisfied of its being me, she opened the Door, and seeing the disordered State of my Countenance, (which I took pains to conceal,) said to me : 'What means this Change in

your Countenance, my Love? God put a Malediction on the Ghost, and on him who invented the Trick which has so annoyed you.' I dissembled as well as I could, telling her that there was nothing the matter, and, lying down in my Bed, she with her accustomed Caresses attempted to pacify me ; so that I began to doubt the Truth of the unfortunate Story. I slept but little, and badly, owing to the violent Strife which was kept up within me. I rose at Day-break, and called together the Servants who attended me in the Field, receiving Cornelio with the most favourable Aspect that I could assume. We went out, but in the Course of the whole Day, I found no Game for the Hawks to pursue, nor any Thing for the Dogs to hunt. I considered this as a bad Omen ; and in the Evening the Traitor Cornelio pretended Illness, as an Excuse for returning Home. I gave him Leave to go, and desired him to tell my Wife that I had a

Heron to hunt with, three Leagues off, and that I could not return to her *that* Night; for that I intended to take the Heron out at Break of Day. He set out very well satisfied with his Errand, while I remained puzzling my Brain as to the Course I should adopt.

CHAP. VII.

The Squire witnesses a most tragical Event.

AS it was already late, and I wished to wait till Night, I sent off my Servants to prepare the Heron, and when it was quite dark, returned to my House with all possible Silence, and entering by a Gate in the Garden, by means of the Master-key, I went directly to Cornelio's Apartment, and opening the Door, found that he was absent, and a Light was burning in his Room. I took the Light and went into an adjoining Room, to examine whether he was there; I searched all over this Room, and going to the further Extremity of it, which opened into another Apartment, over which was my Wife's Bed-chamber, I discovered a Ladder leaning against the Wall, which reached to the Bedroom above, and at the upper End of it

there was a large Opening, through which a Man might creep very well, though it was covered with a Painting by Titian, of the Adultery of Venus and Mars. Till that Moment I had not believed the Extent of my Misfortune. I removed the Ladder, that he might have no Means of descending ; then rushing like a Thunderbolt to my Bed-room, that I might take them unawares, my Wife came to open the Door to me, while her Loverran in a great Hurry towards the Ladder ; but not finding it there, he fell into the Room below, and broke both his Legs at the Knees. I locked the Door of the Bed-chamber, and ran down to the fallen Man, who went drawing his Limbs along after him like a hewed Spanish Bull. ‘ Ah ! Traitor ! ’ exclaimed I, ‘ ungrateful for all the Benefits you have received, this is the Recompence due to false Adulterers. And, fastening him to one of the Sides of the Ladder, I strangled him, after stabbing him

several Times. In the Height of this Phrensy, I ran up Stairs, with the Intention of treating my Wife in the same Way ; but on my attempting it, the Dagger fell from my Hand ; and though I repeated the Attempt several Times, my Arm continued incapable of exerting itself to wound that Body which had always resisted my Efforts against it so effectually. At last I carried her down Stairs, and, placing her close to her Lover (who was now incapable of doing her any further Injury), I tied her Hands and Feet together, and taking out his Heart, placed it between the two, that she might every Day behold the Heart which had pleased her so much when living. Then dragging the dead Body of the Servant towards them, I said to her : ‘ You see here the Witness of your Crime.’ I endeavoured again to kill her, and again found my Arm restrained ; and finally resolved to destroy her with Hunger and Thirst, giving her

every Day half a Pound of Bread and a small Quantity of Water. This makes the fifteenth Day since she beheld the Light, or has heard a Word from my Mouth ; nor has she in all this Time spoken a Word to me, seeing that I have inflicted all this Misery on her with my own Hands. To me they have not appeared like fifteen Days, but fifteen thousand Years, and each Day I have suffered as many thousand Deaths. This is the miserable State to which I am reduced, forsaken by all that could have afforded me Consolation, and in so desperate a Situation, that I wish God had been pleased to make me an Outcast, free from all Ties, that I might fly to some Part of the World which has never been inhabited by Human Beings. And now that I have given you an Account of that which no other Soul shall hear from my Lips, I am also desirous that you should behold with

your own Eyes, that which remains still to blast mine with the Remembrance of former Felicity.”

Then taking up a Candle, he desired me me to follow him, and passing through a small Garden, he opened the Door of a Place in which were enclosed all his Misfortunes. One of the most horrible Spectacles that ever presented itself to Human Eyes was then exposed to mine. One Man stretched out, his Body all full of Wounds ; another hacked to Pieces, with a large Opening in his Side, and his Heart placed on a Step, close to one of the most lovely Faces that Nature ever formed. And, as if to increase the Measure of our Grief, it happened, on his opening the Door, that some Dogs followed him into the Place, and on seeing his unfortunate Spouse, they approached her, and began licking her Hands and Face, and shewing great Demonstrations

of Joy ; the Effect of which was discoverable in my Eyes, while it wounded her Husband to the very Soul.

Seeing the Opportunity which his Emotion afforded me, I said to him : “ I have not uttered a Word, Sir, in Reply to all that you have told me, not having hitherto found an Opening through your Passion, nor obtained your Permission to speak.” “ Well then,” replied the Gentleman, “ I now give you Leave to say any Thing that occurs to you.” And, all Fear being dissipated by his Tenderness, I thus addressed him : “ You have confessed to me, Sir, that the first Idea that entered your Heart, of Love for your Wife, has not been, or ever will be obliterated. You have likewise told me, that this Affair, whether true or false, is known to no one except us two, and consequently it cannot have been published : and the Honour or Infamy of Men does not consist in that which they know of themselves, but in

what others know and say of them. For if Men were to imagine that *that* which they know of themselves was known to all the World, in the same Manner that *they* are acquainted with it, many, or the whole of them, would go where they could not be seen of Men. You have effected, by the Death of these, all that you could desire. You have still your Wife living, and perhaps innocent;—since you found yourself irresistibly restrained in every Attempt to destroy her. I will say no more, than that you should reflect on the Emotion which the Caresses and Kindness of the Dogs towards her, have caused in your Heart.” Before the Husband could say a Word in Reply, the Lady, taking Courage, with a deep Sigh, and a Voice that appeared to proceed from some sepulchral Vault, said: “Soldier, spend not your Words in vain; for I do not desire to live, nor for all that the glorious Sun illumines should I wish

again to behold his Light. But, lest struck with Horror at this Tale, you should at some future Time feel inclined to relate the Circumstances of it, I wish you to be acquainted with the Truth; that you may neither condemn the Severity of my Husband, nor publish the Infamy which I do not deserve. These two Men have justly merited the Deaths that have been inflicted on them: that Villain, because he related what he had not, could not have seen; and this mangled Object, not for what he did, but for what he attempted to do, like a treacherous Wretch, ungrateful for the Benefits he had received from my Lord and Master. And he persevered with so much Diligence, that it appeared to me as if he had held a Compact with some Dæmon; for I perceived him in my Room, without knowing how he got in, except that I saw him creep from behind a Picture, and, asking

him what he wanted? he replied, that he came to amuse me in the Absence of my Lord. I did not make use of a bad Word to him, on account of his Pretensions. In the first place, because I have never done so to any Body ; and in the next, because when he saw my Firmness, he did not employ an immodest Expression. And if my Husband should blame me for not making him acquainted with this Circumstance, all I can say is—that, seeing him so full of Wrath and Revenge, I did not dare to communicate to him an Incident which would so afflict his Soul, until he should appear in a more fit State to receive it. But the World does not contain an Empire or Kingdom, for the Possession of which I would consent to stain my Honour, or that of my Husband ; and for the sake of the Pity which I perceive in you, and the Truth I have told you, I intreat you to ask him not to prolong my

Life, but rather to hasten my Death, that I may depart speedily to present this martyred Body to my God !”

From the Moment that the beautiful and unfortunate Lady began to speak, the Husband continued shedding Tears so abundantly, that, availing myself of the Opportunity, I said to him : “ What think you of this, Sir ?” To which he replied, sobbing : “ In the same Manner that I gave you Liberty to *speak*, I now give you Leave to *act* for me as it seems best to you.” I instantly took out my Dagger, and cut the Cords which surrounded those divine but debilitated Limbs. She was so much exhausted, that without the Power of supporting herself, she fell upon my Breast, and then seated herself on the Ground, as if to repose, after the severe Sufferings that she had undergone. Her Husband threw himself on his Knees before her, and embracing her Hands and Feet, said to her : “ As

there is nothing, my dearest Wife and Mistress, for which I have to pardon you, I intreat you with all possible Humility to forgive me." She had not power to answer, for her sudden Restoration had thrown her into a Swoon so profound, that at first I thought her dead ; and her Husband, starting up in great Haste, ran and fetched some Restoratives, by means of which, she who appeared but a Moment before as pale as a Lily, was changed in an Instant to the Bloom of a Rose, and opening her soft azure Eyes, she said to her Husband: " Why have you endeavoured, Sir, to restore me to this unhappy Life?" " That I might preserve my own," replied he. We then took her up, and carried her between us to her Room, and by means of the great Care and Attention he paid her, she was rescued from the Arms of Death. Not one of the Domesticks was Witness to what passed that Night. The next Morning I asked Permission to

depart, that I might continue my Journey ; but he would not allow me to set out for three Weeks ; and, indeed, I required some Repose after the Fatigue of my past Journey, and some Relief after the Horror which this sad Story and frightful Spectacle had occasioned. Impelled by the Violence of his Passion, without considering that the Story might be false, he was induced to commit those Murders, and was on the point of putting an End to the Life of his innocent, unoffending Spouse ; by which he would have passed a most disturbed Life, if he *had* lived ; while his Wife's Character would have been loaded with Infamy, without having committed any Crime. That he should have been deceived by so many Appearances of Truth, his Honour wounded, and his Jealousy, (that Root of so many and so great Evils,) is no Wonder ; but that the Obstinacy, or Pertinacity of a bad Heart should be so great, and full of Fraud, that

in order to carry his malevolent Intention into Effect, he should spend so much Time (which might have been passed quietly) in Schemes and Stratagems for the sake of despoiling the Honour of his Neighbour, is a most astonishing Thing. And indeed these crafty People appear to be made of different Materials from others. But he seems to have been too hasty in putting to death the Man who gave him the Intelligence; for by means of his Information, he might have come at the Truth, without proceeding to such Extremities. Nature itself, however, and even Reason directed him to that just Chastisement, on many Accounts. The first and principal was, that to tell a Man of the Faults of others, of which one has not been a Witness, proceeds from the Wickedness of a malicious Inclination, a corrupt Understanding, and a hardened Conscience. The second : that the communicating bad News to a Man, by which he is

likely to suffer severely, appears as if one took Pleasure in the Misery of one's Friend. The third : because Tale-bearers and Flatterers have destroyed half the World by their Falsehoods. The great Sufferings of that beautiful and much injured Lady, are worthy of Notice. For with all the Trials also she had to endure, and even finding herself at the Brink of Death, she preserved her Patience and Respect for her Husband, in the midst of such great Misfortunes. Would to God that all Women knew the Value of such Conduct ; for the Preservation of Peace in their Houses and the Love of their Husbands ; yielding to him who is more powerful than themselves.

I had been so shocked and disgusted at what I had seen and heard, that although he pressed me, in the most earnest and friendly Manner, to remain with them during the rest of my Life, or, at least, for some Time longer, I could not make up my Mind to do

it. But in refusing, I gave them to understand, that I should leave them perfectly conscious of the Kindness they had heaped upon me; praising my Host for the Valour he had shewn in redeeming his Honour, and the Lady, for the Firmness she had evinced in the Preservation of her Character.

During the Time I remained with them, I could not but observe the Grounds the Husband had for being enamoured of that amiable divine Countenance, so full of modest Reserve. For assuredly in Beauty of Face, Gracefulness of Figure, Mildness of Disposition, and Meekness of Manners, she was a perfect Portrait of Doña Antonia de Calatayad.

In order to guard against the Fear that my Absence might create, and to leave them well satisfied, I gave my Word that I would return to their Service, or at least to their House, when I should have completed the Business that I was going to transact at

Venice; and on this Condition they allowed me to depart. For as I entertained some Dread of the Injury I might suffer from them, so they naturally dreaded lest I should reveal what I had been witness to; and this Sort of Artifice is allowable in those who have been privy to the bad Deeds of others; and, when it is possible, we should avoid shewing that we are Masters of the Lives of those with whose Secrets we are acquainted. Great Calamities have been known to befall the Revealers of Secrets.

At length, with their Permission I took my leave of them, after the flattering and kind Treatment I had experienced; and, having first commended myself to God, I pursued my Journey, filled with Amazement at the Adventure I had met with, alike new to me and teeming with Misery. But I felt highly satisfied at finding myself free from so intricate a Labyrinth, and praised inwardly the Honour and Discretion of the principal

Italian Women, and the Caution with which they act, and have need to act.

I had already got about a Mile from the Gardens, and turning my Head frequently until I had lost Sight of them, I now considered myself as safe as if I had been an hundred Leagues from the Spot. But I suddenly observed two Men on Horseback following me with all imaginable Speed. I looked around me all over the Plain, to see whether there was any Village or House to which I might fly for Shelter; but could not discover a Habitation of any Kind: for I really began to apprehend that they had repented of letting me depart, as I had been witness to all that had passed. Under this Impression, I began to supplicate the Assistance of Heaven; and the nearer the Horsemen approached, the greater became my Terror. At last, when they arrived close to me, I resolved to await their Determination. They approached me in the

rudest Manner, and cried out : “ Stop there, Soldier ! ” I replied : “ Here I am, disposed to do whatever you are pleased to command.” They were two Men, with each a Fowling-piece and a Knife, such as are used for skinning Animals ; their Faces were Sun-burnt, and their Way of Speaking unmannerly, considering that they addressed themselves to a solitary Spaniard on Foot. For on my asking them what they required of me, they replied, with the worst Grace in the World : “ *We* require nothing of you ; but there is a Person behind us, who will give what Orders he pleases.” This made me tremble, as it tended to confirm my Fears. “ Pray, Gentlemen,” said I, “ what Offence have I committed against Mr. Aurelio, that you should treat me in this Way ? ” “ He will tell you presently,” replied they. “ Pray, Gentlemen,” rejoined I, “ allow me to continue my Journey.” Upon which one of them exclaimed : “ If you do not remain

where you are, I will put these two Balls into your Body." I saw plainly that there was no such Thing as overcoming them by an humble Deportment; and therefore I reflected thus within myself: "If these Fellows come hither with an Intent to kill me, my Courtesy will avail me little, for here there is no Room for dissembling; and if they do not come to kill me, I do not wish them to look upon me as a Coward. And therefore, when he talked of the two Balls, I put my Hand to my Sword, exclaiming: "If I once draw this Weapon, by the Life of the King of Spain, I will hough the Horses, and hew their two Riders to Pieces." "Bravo! Don Spaniard," said one of them. By this Time the Gentleman had come up in a gentle Amble, and seeing my Sword drawn, he inquired, what was the Reason of it? I replied: "I don't know what is meant by so unjust a Proceeding as the attempting to kill him who has endeavoured to preserve

a Life." "I do not understand what this Language means," said the Gentleman. The Servants answered him briskly, exclaiming: "As you desired us to detain him, Sir; on his attempting to go on, we threatened him with a Pistol; and, he in Return declared that he would hew us and our Horses to pieces." To which the Master replied: "I did not desire you to detain him for the sake of injuring him, but for his Advantage. Nor am I at all astonished that two Men well mounted and armed, treating thus a solitary Individual on Foot, should lead him, as an honourable Man, to act boldly in his own Defence, as he has done, and even with more determined Resistance. Get down, Sir, from that Horse, and give your Fowling-piece to the Spanish Soldier, and let him mount the Horse, and do you accompany him to Venice; and if he chooses to send you back immediately, you may return; if not, wait

upon him there as long as he pleases to detain you." Then turning to me, he said : " The Confusion, Soldier, that my Affliction occasioned, made me, in some measure, unmindful of my Obligation ; and my Wife, prompted by her angelick Disposition, and softened by your compassionate Conduct, having lost all Recollection of my Ill-treatment, has sent you here a Purse of a hundred Crowns for your Journey, and this Jewel from her own Person—a Cross of Gold set with Emeralds and Rubies ; and she lives in hopes of seeing again the brave Man who prevented so great an Effusion of Blood." I threw myself at his Feet, returning him my grateful Thanks for the Honour and Favour he had shewn me ; then, mounting my Horse, I took for my Attendant the Man who had threatened to kill me.

On reaching Venice, my Stock of Wealth appeared so great, that I fancied I had wherewithal to purchase the whole World.

I desired my Attendant, as he was well acquainted with the City, to conduct me to a good Inn ; and on arriving at one, I did not care to dismiss him, for I was as well pleased to have him with me, as he was to come. I reposed there that Night, and the next Morning sent him Home.

CHAP. VIII.

Conclusion of the marvellous Story—The Squire arrives at Venice, and is kindly received by the Lady Camilla.

I BEHELD the Grandeur of that Republick with Admiration. It is so rich, and held in such high Estimation, that they persuade themselves they have more Reason to be proud than any other Nation in the World; but one would not suppose this from their Behaviour, for they conduct themselves in so uncourteous a Manner, that a Person who did not know them, would not rate them so highly as they deserve. As an Instance of their Vanity, I shall mention a ridiculous Anecdote concerning a Venetian Nobleman and a Portuguese; who esteem themselves so highly, that they think nothing of the rest of the World. It was

this: As I was passing over a small Bridge, called Bragadin, I stopped on seeing a great Nobleman coming behind me, and made my Obeisance to him, which is a Sort of Compliment they expect from one. A Portuguese, of middling Stature, was crossing over the Bridge in the opposite Direction, (looking strait before him,) with *Otter-skin* Gloves on his Hands, and plaited Boots on his Legs, with great Importance in his Gait. On his reaching the Middle of the Bridge, the great Man expected that he would salute him, which in Reason he ought to have done, as being in the Nobleman's Country. But on the other Hand, the Portuguese conceived that, as a Foreigner, *he* had a Claim to this Mark of Respect. It consequently happened, that on their both reaching the Middle of the Bridge, they jostled against each other with great Dignity. The Portuguese pressed against the Venetian, to prevent himself from falling into the Water,

and the Nobleman thought it beneath him to give way. At last they both fell; the Venetian, being weak in the Legs, on his Back, and the Portuguese on his Face; and they barely escaped falling into the Sea. The Portuguese jumped up nimbly, and brushed the Dust off him with his *Otter-skin* Gloves, whilst the Nobleman brushed his striped Breeches and cleaned his Back. After cleaning themselves, they stood looking at each other; and having remained for some Time silent, the Nobleman said to the Portuguese: “Were you not aware that I am a Venetian, and a Patrician Gentleman?” “And you, pray,” replied the Portuguese, “did you not know that I am a Portuguese Nobleman of Evora?” The Venetian retorted with great Contempt: “Get out, paltry Bastard, Cuck-old!” The Portuguese, making a Motion with his Foot, as if to kick him, exclaimed in return: “Begone, you Goose!” Each then followed his own Road, turning his

Head back as he went; the Nobleman, pointing his Finger at the Portuguese, and exclaiming with a contemptuous Smile, "March about your Business:" And the Portuguese, with the same Gestures, "Look at that Turkey-Cock!" Indeed it was difficult to decide which of the two was most foolish and fantastical; though I felt rather inclined to give it in favour of the Portuguese, for having acted so rudely in a foreign Country, where the Spaniards are so little valued, that the Venetians, in praising their City, boast that they have neither Heat nor Cold; Mud nor Dust; Flies nor Mosquitoes; Fleas nor Lice; nor even Spaniards! They are such Courtiers, that to gain any Thing they like, or have need of, there is no endearing Expression they will not use: but when they are displeased, there is no vulgar Expression they will not employ.

One Day a Venetian Nobleman went to buy some Fish; and, without knowing any

Thing of the Man who sold it, he began asking him in the kindest Manner after his Wife and Family; telling the Fisherman himself that he was a very honest Man. But, on his refusing to sell him the Fish at the Price the Nobleman put upon it, he did not hesitate to change his Tone; calling the poor Man a Cuckold, his Wife a Strumpet, and his Children Bastards. I observed some other Things there, well worthy of Notice, on account of the Weight they derive from their Antiquity and Government.

I returned to my Inn at the Hour of Dinner, and had hardly sat down to dine, when they informed me that a Lady of Quality, in a Chair, had come to inquire for me; asking for the Spanish Soldier who had arrived there.—Knowing that there was no one else in the House who answered this Description, I went out to see what the Lady wanted with me. On going to the Door, I

saw a Woman get out of the Chair, of a fine Figure and very handsome Face, and her Dress corresponding with her Beauty. She welcomed me with a great many Caresses and flattering Expressions, which threw me into Doubt and Confusion; and as I really thought that she mistook me for another Person, I said to her: "I consider myself quite unworthy, Madam, of so great and unexpected an Honour as this; and I therefore intreat you to reflect whether I am the Person you seek." She replied, with an animated Countenance, while she threw her Arms round my Neck: "I well know, Soldier, whom I sought, and whom I have found. I am the Lady Camilla,* Sister of the Lord Aurelio, from whom I last Night received a Letter, in which he desires me to receive and entertain you during the Time that you are pleased to remain in Venice.

* This Story of Camilla, the Reader will recollect in *Gil Blas*. *Tr.*

not as an indifferent Person, but as himself.” “I can easily imagine,” answered I, “that every Thing good in the World is likely to proceed from so excellent a Gentleman; and as his Kindness is transmitted to me in the first Instance through so fine and charming a Lady, I have no Doubt that every Thing will go well with me.” “Come then,” said she, “follow me Home; for though I have been all this Morning hunting about for your Inn, I took care to leave Directions for a proper Dinner to be prepared for so worthy a Guest.” And on my objecting, from having already ordered my Dinner, she assured me that she could not neglect the Commands of her Brother. Paying, therefore, what I owed at the Inn, I went off with her, not doubting a Syllable of what she told me; though somewhat apprehensive that this might be a Stratagem of her Brother’s, to execute at Venice, that which he had failed to do at his own House. But she conducted me Home with

so much Affection and Gentleness of Deportment, that all my Suspicions vanished presently. We entered a very well-furnished Room, where I found a Table covered with a great many choice Dishes, and, being very hungry, I paid my Respects to them with much Good-will. For, besides that they were excellent of their Kind, the Lady Camilla would serve me herself with her delicate white Hands; nor did she cease to impress on me the kind and friendly Instructions that her Brother Aurelio had given her. After Dinner, she took out a Letter signed Aurelio, in which were these Words: "A Spanish Soldier, who has been my Guest, left me this Morning much to my Regret; as his Conduct proves him to be a superiour Sort of Person. I have not recompensed him so well as I wished; though your Sister, my dear Wife, sent him, after he had set out on his Journey, an Amber Purse, and a Gold Cross (from her own

Person), ornamented with Emeralds and Rubies, having nothing at present more worthy his Acceptance. Pray be good enough to seek him, receive him into your House, and entertain him in the same friendly Manner that you would me. Do not suffer him to incur the most trifling Expence while he remains at Venice; and if he chooses to return hither, let him have what is necessary for his Journey." I became quite convinced now, by the Appearance of the Letter, that every Thing told me by the Lady Camilla was true, and that she had received her Intelligence of my kind Treatment, and the handsome Presents which had been made me, from that noble Gentleman, Aurelio, himself. She then desired that I would have my Portmanteau brought to her House, as she was resolved that I should never eat or sleep out of it, or spend a Farthing but at her Expence. I expressed my sincerest Obligations, but told

her that I had neither brought a Portman-teau nor any Thing else with me, but my own homely Person. Upon which she desired a Servant to look for a small Trunk, that she might give it to me. He brought me one ornamented very curiously; and, giving me the Key of it, she advised me to lock up my Papers, &c. carefully in it; for that in Venice it was very necessary to guard against Thieves. I was much pleased to have this little Trunk, and immediately put into it my Papers, my Money, and the Cross, which she expressed great Delight at seeing; giving it a thousand Kisses, as having belonged to her Sister-in-law, to whom she said she was infinitely attached. I left the Key in the Lock, and asked her to take care of the Trunk for me. She said she thought it would be better to leave it with me, in case I should wish to take any Money out; “though, to be sure,” she added, “you will not require any as long as you remain in Venice.” I

replied that, whether I should have need of it or not, it would be better in her Custody than in mine. At last by persisting, (though she constantly objected,) I prevailed on her to take charge of it. At Night they set a very pretty Supper before me, which she graced with her Presence; for she was really very handsome. I passed a good Night, very well satisfied at having enjoyed myself at the Expence of so fine a Lady.

CHAP. IX.

The Lady Camilla leaves Marcos in the Lurch, but is afterwards herself outwitted.

SHE came to visit me at Day-break the next Morning, asking me how I found myself, and desiring that I would call with Freedom for any Thing I might want; for that she was going to pay a Visit to a great Lady, and if she should not return in Time for Dinner, her Servants would provide for me the same as if she were present. She did not return to Dinner, nor did she make her Appearance during the whole Day. I waited for her till Night, but still she was absent. I then became somewhat uneasy, lest this might possibly turn out to be some Trick or Artifice; for she herself had told me, that I should not confide in any Woman in Venice, however high her Rank might be,

for if I did, she would certainly deceive me. But calling to Mind the Appearance of the Letter, and that she could not possibly have known the Contents of it, except from Aurelio himself, my Mind was quieted.

The next Morning, as she had not visited me at the same Hour as on the preceding Day, nor for a long Time after, I inquired of one of the Servants whether the Lady Camilla was yet stirring. The Man replied, that there was no such Lady in that House. I repeated my Question, and he gave me the same Answer. But another Servant, who most assuredly was in the Plot, made his Appearance, and asked me what I wanted with her, for that she was gone on a Visit to a certain sick Lady. I pretended to be satisfied with this Information, but taking the other Man aside, and asking him whether the House belonged to Camilla, he told me, that all he knew of the Matter was, that she had hired that suit of Apartments for a great

Spanish Nobleman. I held my Peace, and went to the Inn where I had first stopped, to inquire whether they knew any Thing of the Lady who had gone thither to seek me; and if they were acquainted with her Place of Residence. One of the People readily answered me; “He who can tell you where she lives better than any one else, is the Person who came here with you, and whom you sent back with the Horse, for he accompanied her to point out your Lodging; but she, whom you take for a great Lady, is no other than a Strumpet, who lives by Debauchery and Deception.”

Without giving any Answer, I left the House in a State of Despair, on seeing myself robbed of my Money, Jewels, and Papers, by the Roguery of my Attendant, who had given her the Signs and Particulars of what I brought with me, by which Means, she forged the Letter she showed me. But, considering that she herself had advised me

of the Trick she was about to play me, I made up my Mind, and returned back to the Hotel where she had taken me to, in order to devise a Mode of repairing the Injury I had received. I asked the Waiter, who before had spoken for her, whether Lady Camilla had arrived? and he answered me, "Sir she was here just now, and as she did not find you, she returned to the sick Lady's House, but if you should wish to see her for any Thing particular, I'll go and call her." I wish to see her, I answered, for her to give me out some Papers in which my Person is described, for I have got here a Bill of Exchange for Two Hundred Crowns due to me, but which I cannot receive without the Paper alluded to. The Waiter told me he would instantly go and acquaint her with the Affair. Whilst he was gone, I forged the Bill of Exchange, payable to me under the Description of my Person, as contained in the Passport I had brought from Milan.

I had scarcely finished the Draft of the Bill, when my Lady Camilla entered the Room, under apparent great Concern, but secretly hoping to get the Two Hundred Crowns together with all the Rest. It is presumable she had already seen the Paper containing the Description of my Person, for it was in her Possession, and she must have had a false Key of my little Trunk. I told her the Circumstances of the Transaction, pulled out the Bill from my Bosom, and on shewing it to her, she sent a Maid Servant for my little Trunk. My fallen Spirits instantly began to revive, and I told the Lady she must seek out some Gentleman for me, that I might empower him to receive the Amount of the Bill, because I did not wish the Spanish Ambassador to see me with this Paper, as I was known to him.

She soon brought me one of her own Cul-
lies, very well dressed, telling me that he was
a Gentleman of considerable Rank. I told

her, it would be Necessary to procure a Notary to draw out the Power for him, and Lady Camilla, in order to favour me still more, observed, that it should be done in her own Handwriting. They went to fetch him, and in the mean Time, I took up my little Trunk for Safety, and went in search of a Vessel in which I might get a Passage. I arranged this Point, and returned to the Hotel, where I found the Lady, her Cully, and the Notary. I gave them the Power, and the Bill of Exchange, together with the Paper in which my Person was described. With this they remained perfectly satisfied, and I much more so; and as it was now Night, I requested them to receive the Amount of the Two Hundred Crowns as early as possible in the Morning, for I wished to do a great Piece of Service to Lady Camilla. I was going to pay the Notary, but to this she would by no Means consent. They then departed, and I again earnestly enjoined

them to let the Collection of the Funds be made as soon in the Morning as was practicable. They gave me their Words, that by Eight it should be all settled.

On their getting out into the Street, I looked out at the Window, to observe their Motions, and to see that all was clear for me also to make my escape, when the Cully turned round his Head, laughing at the Trick played upon me, and, as they caught sight of me, I again recommended to them the earliest Attention to my Affair. With this they laughed still more, because, as I had before given them the Trunk with all Simplicity, they believed that this also was done in the same Manner.

On seeing them clear out of the Street, I took up the Trunk under my Cloak, and went off to my Vessel. I had not proceeded thirty Yards, when I met the Waiter who was in the Interest of Lady Camilla, and on his asking me where I was going with so

much Haste, I answered him, I was carrying the Trunk to the Lady, who had just left me at the bottom of that Street—pointing out to him one, along which, though he wandered all Night, he could not come across her. Well, says he, I'll go and let her know ; and do you return to the Hotel. He went down his own Street, and I straight to the Vessel, which was already waiting for me, with such good Spirits, that by Morning we were thirty Leagues from Venice. On recounting over my Adventures to the Passengers, from the Style of the Deception and Artifice used, they soon guessed who the Parties were ; but when they were informed that she had spent her own Money in treating me, they were delighted, and declared their Intention of publishing it all over Venice when they returned.

I did not know whether to cast the Blame on my own Credulity, or on the Dexterity with which her Artifice had been

accomplished. For though it is very difficult to escape the Effects of a Fraud, founded on clear and evident Truth, yet it argues a certain Degree of Levity to give into a Belief of it with too great Facility. But then, on the other Hand, the Deceitfulness of a handsome well-spoken Woman is so powerful, that I believe she might have taken me in with less Attractions. A too great Credulity finds a Place in simple inexperienced Minds; especially if the Persuasion leads towards our own Advantage; for in that Case we are most easily deceived. I found myself ruined and undone, not feeling so much the Insult offered to my Person, as the Want of my Money, of which I stood in so much Need. And, therefore, it was not my Wit that put the Trick into my Head, but pure Necessity; for being in a State of Poverty, in a foreign Country, I found I had no lawful and easy Means open to me to repair my Injury, but that of practising a similar or greater Deceit

than what I had myself experienced. But God deliver me from a Falsehood that had in it so much the Appearance of Truth, that the Assistance of Heaven itself was necessary to discover, and not give Credit to it. Though, on a candid Review of the Subject—what previous Acquaintance or Tokens of Friendship, or Love, had previously subsisted between this Lady and me, that could induce me to persuade myself that she would expend her Money upon me so readily, or convince me that she was sincere in her treatment towards me. The Result of all this is, that I consider in a suspicious Light the Offers and Caresses of Strangers. It is wrong to subject oneself to Obligations for which there is no apparent cause ; and therefore it is safer, in the Event of such Offers, to be grateful, but not to accept them. The greatest Repellant to deceitful Conduct is, the not evincing by our uncivil Manner that we observe it, but rather to resist it with

Moderation; for mild, gentle Behaviour subdues every Thing to our Wishes; Courtesy and Liberality ensure general Good-will, and cover a Multitude of Faults. For if a Man is prodigal of good Manners and friendly Expressions, and not too saving in his Expenses, he will be sure to make Friends of those amongst whom he lives.

CHAP. X.

*Mighty curious Adventures that befall the Squire
during his Voyage.*

I NOW resolved on going to Sea; my Object being, not so much to visit any particular Part of the World, as to fly from the Deceit that had been practised on me, and its unpleasant Consequences. It therefore became necessary for me to extend my Travels beyond the Limits I had contemplated, to some Place where I should be able to provide better for myself.

On board the Vessel in which I embarked I found one among the Passengers who told me that he was flying from Venice, on account of an Accusation against him of an unfavourable and serious Nature; and that he was anxious to have the Sea between him and his Adversary, until the Statement

should be proved, or he should be able to get rid of the bad Name he had acquired. “I consider it,” said I, “a notable Error, to turn away the Face, and leave the Back to receive Injuries and Wounds, the Effects of which must be irreparable Bruises. For the more that an injured Person shews himself, the less every one is inclined to credit any Accusation brought against him, and to commit himself by blemishing his Reputation. But the greatest and most convincing Testimony against a Person so accused, appears by his running away. *His* Opinion is held in little Estimation, who does not dread the Wounds inflicted by an absent Tongue. There is no Man, however correct in his Conduct, who has not some Competitor; and, to avoid giving Encouragement to his Designs, he ought not to lose Sight of him: for ill-intentioned People will not scruple to employ the most trifling Circumstance to set the Opinion of the World

against *him* whom they would be glad to see out of it.

With this, and other Advice that I gave him, I persuaded him to return to Venice ; which was of no little Advantage to me ; for, as we were sailing along the Coast, I contrived to disembark at the first small Place we came to, and thus found myself near Lombardy. On landing, I took the Road to Genoa, while he proceeded towards Venice ; and, by the good Advice I gave him, I avoided going round more than two hundred Leagues, which is the Distance between Venice and Genoa, by Sea. I was in hopes of finding at Genoa, Don Fernando de Toledo, the Uncle ; but as he had left it, I followed him with so much Haste, though the Night was stormy, that I overtook him at Saona, just as he was setting out again. He received me with great Cheerfulness, which was very necessary in the melancholy State in which I found myself, arising

from the continued Series of Misfortunes that have always attended me.

We embarked for Spain, leaving on the Right-hand the Coast of Piedmont and France, where there was little Security at that Period, in consequence of the Bands of Robbers that were ravaging the Country ; a Set of People who were governed by their own Will and Desire, and not by that of their King. We did not enter any Port to procure what was necessary ; but went on Shore where it appeared most convenient for accommodating the Crews, leaving the eleven Feluccas in which we came, in safe Custody. At these Places we dined, and procured Fire-wood and Water. I had brought from Genoa a Skin containing about five Gallons of very good Greek Wine, which I found an agreeable Companion, until we arrived at the Pommes de Marseilles, which are some high barren Rocks without Grass or any Thing green

upon them, void of Trees and of every Thing to gratify the Sight.

Having reached this Part of the Coast with some Difficulty, the Felucca that I was in being astern of all the rest, she ran aground very near these Rocks, on a Part where the Beating of the Waves had formed a large Ridge or Bank of Sand. As soon as we felt her strike, the Master exclaimed : “ We are lost ! ” As I could swim, and observed a dry Spot which I could easily reach, I took off a loose Coat that I wore, and throwing it aside, put the Skin of Wine (the Contents of which were now greatly reduced) round my Neck in the Form of a Shoulder-belt, and got to the Sand-bank, after swimming five or six Fathoms.

During this Time the Felucca had got clear of the Ground again, and the Sailors made sail, thinking no more of me than if I had been a Tunny-fish ; and though I called out to them, they either did not hear me or

account of the Waves, or they did not choose to attend to me, that it might not be said of them, that they acted contrary to their usual Custom. For they are an impious Set of People, without natural Affection or Civility, and as far removed from Humanity, and Strangers to Charity, as the Monsters of the Ocean. I now gave myself up for lost, and remained without Hopes of Consolation, except it should come from God, or my blessed Guardian Angel. I began to reflect within myself what would become of me, unless some Vessel or Boat should happen to pass by and relieve me from this dire Necessity.

I remained from eight in the Morning till two in the Afternoon, in hopes of obtaining Help, confident that the Nobleman who was on Board, would take pity on my forlorn Situation. But the Sailors were so cruel as to persuade him I was drowned. I encouraged myself from Time to Time with a

Drop of Wine from my Skin ; till, at length summoning Resolution to act, I resolved to deliver myself up to the Tyranny of the Sea, that insatiable fierce Ravager ; and to effect this, I took off a buff Dress I had on, (made of fine Cordovan Leather,) and with the Point of my Dagger, and two dozen tagged Points, which I always carry with me on a Journey, I drew the lower Part of the Skin in at the Neck, so close together, that I could fill it with Air, which would not have the Power of escaping. I then emptied the Skin of the divine Liquor which yet remained in it, and filling it well with Air, made it act as a Balance to my buff Jacket. I took the same Pains with my Boots, closing them well up with my Garters, that they might serve also as a Support to me in the Water. Then stripping myself of my loose Breeches, as the Water would have been apt to flow in through the Pockets, I remained with nothing but my Doublet and

Shirt ; for, being clothed entirely in Leather, it would not so easily yield to the Wet. And being now prepared in this Manner, and remembering that those Undertakings are sure to succeed which are directed by Omnipotence, I addressed myself to him thus : “ Oh ! Almighty God, Beginning, Middle, and End without End, of all Things visible and invisible, by whose Majesty Men and Angels live, and are preserved ; Oh ! Universal Founder of the Heavens and Elements ; to Thee, who hast employed so many Miracles for thy Creatures, in this Ocean, and who guided the blessed Raymundo, with nothing but the Assistance of his Mantle, over so many Leagues of Water, to a Place of Safety, and in this same Place delivered from the Jaws of Death, those Sailors who were on the point of being swallowed up by the merciless Sea, whose Waves thou didst tranquillize, at the simple Request of thy Servant, Francisco de Paula :

by the Birth, Death, and Resurrection of thy most Holy Son, our Redeemer, I beseech thee, that thou wilt not permit me to die out of my own Element." And then I said to my holy Guardian Angel: "My Angel, whom God has appointed as a Protector of this Body and Soul, I entreat thee, for his Sake who created thee and me, to guide and support me in this my Calamity!" And having pronounced these Words, and taken fast hold of my *Boat*, I threw myself boldly into the Sea, supported by my buff Jacket on one Side, and my Wine Skin on the other, making use of *my four natural Oars*, but not so as to fatigue myself: for, as I had to carry the Air-boat, I continued striking out cautiously, so as not to subdue my Strength by wearying it. I did not venture to reflect on the Depth of Water under me for fear of being discouraged by it. Neither did I dare to remain still, well knowing that as long as a Body continues in motion, the hungry

Monsters of the Sea will not venture to attack it; and if at any Time I perceived Weakness in my *Oars*, I extended them on the Water, trusting more to that than to my *Boat*, though *this* occasionally afforded me Comfort, by the fragrant Perfume arising from the Skin, which was close under my Nose. I began praying, but was soon obliged to discontinue it, on finding that my Respiration, which is very necessary in such Struggles, began to fail me. I floated an Hour in this Way; sometimes swimming and sometimes resting, until a Wind which came from Africa began to freshen, and to drive me again towards the Shore. I was forced to resist this Impulse, lest I should encounter the Rocks of which I have spoken above, and be dashed to pieces. But while I was in this State of extreme Danger, I espied a small Creek, which inspired me with fresh Vigour; and working my Way along towards it, I was miraculously assisted

by this same South Wind. As soon as I approached near, to get a distinct View of the Creek, I discovered a Man taking his Luncheon on its Barks; these two Sights enabled me to renew my Efforts. But the more I rejoiced and endeavoured to get near him, the greater was his Alarm at the Sight of me, imagining that I must be a Whale or some Sea-monster. At length a great Wave came and carried me so far in, that I was thrown upon my Feet, and the Man became so terrified at seeing me, that he ran off into the Country, whilst a Greyhound that he had with him flew into the Water to attack me; and it might have fared ill with me, if I had not drawn out my Dagger, which is my constant Companion, and pricked him with it; which set him running after his Master. The Water is always calm in these Creeks. I therefore got on Shore without farther Difficulty; and finding myself once more safe on dry Land, I went down on my Knees and

returned Thanks to the Great First Cause. But having cast my Eyes on the Eatables that the Man had left, I looked next at my Skin and buff Jacket sewed with the Doublet, and the Boots laced together, which also made a respectable Appearance; and altogether I was not astonished at the Alarm I had excited. I immediately attacked a Piece of Bread and Cheese, and a Jar of Wine, that he had left behind him; and making up for past Failures, I can swear that in my Life I never tasted a more delicious Repast. But while I had the Jar at my Head, ten or twelve Men approached me, *cum Fustibus et Armis*, who had been collected together by the Runaway, for the Purpose of killing the Whale; but as they did not discover it, they asked the good Man whereabouts it was, and inquired of me whether I had seen it? He was confounded; and I replied in Italian, (for I did not dare to speak Spanish,) that no Whale

had shewn itself there, nor any other Being which resembled it, but myself, as I then appeared before them; and that the Man, on seeing me, had fled, for the sake of leaving me his Bread and Cheese. They laughed heartily at their Companion, accusing him of being drunk, and making great Sport of him, in the French Language: and they took pity on me, seeing me so wet and naked.

At this Time a Felucca arrived with twelve Oars, sent by order of Don Ferdinand de Toledo, in search of me; and he assured them that he would hang the Master, if they did not bring me on Board, dead or alive. I made Signals to them with my leather-skin Bottle, which was the greatest Object I had to shew; and seeing it, they pulled round presently into the Creek, where they found me trembling with Cold and Wet, exposing myself to the Sun, in greater Distress than a Dog when tossed in a Blanket. They

carried me on board the Felucca, astonished at finding me alive, and that a Man of nearly fifty Years of Age should have supported himself through such Fatigues.

On our arriving at Marseilles, I was caressed and entertained by that great Nobleman, who is known and beloved by all the World. But as that Adventure befell me at an advanced Period of my Life, I have constantly felt and suffered from the Effects of the Wet and Cold, every Winter since it happened. On this Occasion, I resembled a Beetle who, being in Company with a Snail, (gathered up in her Shell for fear of Rain,) determined to trust to its Wings and fly in search of a dry Spot; and on raising itself for this Purpose, the Snail exclaimed, “Yonder you will find it!” But at this Moment a large Drop of Rain falling on its Wings, he was thrown into, and carried away, by the Flood of the River. In like Manner, I trusted to my Knowledge of Swimming, which the others

were ignorant of, and threw myself into the Puddle of Tunny-fish, (as Don Luis de Gongora calls the Sea,) where *that* might have befallen me which happened to the Beetle, if God had not prevented it:—for with a Beast so cruel and treacherous as the troubled Ocean, it is not enough to know how to swim; for a Man casting himself into the Waves, is like a Fly in the Midst of a Lake.

Land Animals are accustomed to a faithful, friendly, mild, and tranquil Element, which affords Shelter and Nourishment to the Weary in every Part of it. But the ungrateful Sea is the Devourer of the good Things of the Earth; a perpetual Sepulchre of every Thing concealed beneath its Surface; towering over the Land, to see whether there is any Thing it can carry off from its Shores; ravenous after every Object that comes within its Reach; Desolator of Cities, Islands, and Mountains; an

invidious Enemy of Peace and Tranquillity ; Executioner of the Living, and Despiser of the Dead ; and withall so avaricious, that although full of Water and Fish, People die in it of Hunger and Thirst ! What then can one expect but the Destruction of those who put their Trust in this treacherous Element ?

It appears too, as if nothing but the Hand of God could have effected that which lately happened, at the Capture of Mamora, to Don Lorenzo and the Captain Juan Gutierrez. The latter, while swimming, and without any Assistance, but bearing the Burthen of a great Age, carried off a Boat, in which there were five Moors. And Don Lorenzo, after swimming and being tossed about all Night by the agitated Waves, on arriving at the Boat, in which he might have reposed after such immense Labour, animated himself with supernatural Strength, and exclaimed that he did not desire to enter the Boat,

as there were some following him, who had greater Need of Relief than himself;— and then swam on. An Occurrence similar to this has seldom or never been known.

I now suffered not only from my Troubles, but from the Self-condemnation which my Temerity occasioned. For my Confidence might have cost me my Life; and it really was to shew that I knew how to swim, and that I possessed Courage to venture, which made me cast myself into the Sea with so little Consideration; though it is true that, in such unexpected Circumstances, Reason has very little Influence. But it certainly would have been preferable, rather to have awaited the Fate of the rest of my Companions, than to anticipate my own, which had hitherto been so little fortunate. If Vanity is ever suffered to beget Temerity, it should only be in the Hearts of such as have had great Experience of good Fortune. But of what Importance

could it be to me, to acquire the Reputation of a good Swimmer; seeing that I was neither a Frog nor a Dolphin; nor meant to become a *Merman*? Surely this was all Vanity, Rashness, and Folly!

CHAP. X.

The Squire enters into the Service of a great Man.

WE arrived in Spain, and disembarked at Barcelona, a beautiful City both on the Land and Sea Side ; abounding in Provisions, and Kindness, which appeared the sweeter from being expressed in the Spanish Language. For though the Inhabitants of this Province have the Character of being somewhat rough, I observed that towards those who treated them well, they behaved with Mildness and Liberality, and in a very friendly Way towards Strangers. All Societies in the World require Strangers to gain their Esteem by good Manners.

If those who are not Natives of a Place, appear humble, and live without injuring the Inhabitants, they easily acquire universal Good-will; for good Behaviour added to their

lonely Situation, creates Pity and Love in every well-disposed Breast. All Animals of the same Species treat each other well, except *Men* and *Dogs*. These latter, with a thousand good Qualities which one is accustomed to admire, possess a vile Inclination to snarl at the poor Stranger that comes among them, and even to kill him if they can. And the same occasionally happens with Mankind, if a Stranger visiting a foreign Country does not conduct himself with Propriety. What is most apt to offend the Natives of a Country, is the paying too much Attention to their Women. And accordingly, a Stranger should scrupulously avoid casting a too curious Eye upon them, as it will always be noticed by the Host whose Guests they are. Many People complain of foreign Countries they have visited; but they do not speak of the Cause they gave for the bad Treatment they met with. They praise their own Country above all

others, not reflecting on the Behaviour they are obliged to adopt at Home, the Constraints of which are less obvious from continued Use.

I can truly say that I found Fathers and Mothers in all Parts of the Kingdom of Aragon, and excellent Friends throughout Andalucia. But it is only Persons of bad Character who conduct themselves ill in this Respect; and in every Part of the World People of that Description are Enemies of Peace, turbulent, restless, seditious, and arrogant.

I was extremely happy to get to Madrid, being anxious to see it; and on my Arrival, I found many Friends there desirous of seeing me. I was introduced to a great Prince, who was much attached to Musick and Poetry. For though I always endeavoured to fly from Servitude, I found myself forced to resort to it. I entered into his

good Graces very unexpectedly, became intimate and a great Favourite with him; and finding myself satiated with past Troubles, my present good Treatment led me to indulge so much in Idleness and Luxury, that I grew very fat, and the Gout soon began to torment me.

I amused myself at this Period with keeping Birds; and amongst them, used to make much of a Linnet, superiour to the rest in Harmony, which I kept in my Room at Night. I overheard him once cracking Hemp Seeds, as I thought, the whole Night long, contrary to their usual Practice; but on going to look at the Cage at Day-break, I discovered a young Mouse in it, who had swelled himself out so much with the Quantity of Hemp Seed he had devoured, as not to have the Power of turning to go out. I said to myself: “ This young Mouse has brough this Life into Danger,

by over-eating himself: I am following the same Road ; and if a Mouse, with only one Night's Gormandizing, has rendered himself so unwieldy, what will be the Consequence to me, who dine and sup luxuriously every Day, but the bringing on some Disease, perhaps an Apoplexy, which will shortly put a Period to my Existence?" Taking the Hint, I left off eating Suppers ; and by means of this, and taking Exercise, I have preserved my Life. For really the Habit of eating at the Expence of another, fattens one too much : one eats without measure ; and he who does not set a strict Watch upon himself in this Respect, is in great Danger of producing a dangerous Illness. It is necessary for People to confine themselves to such Food as their Stomachs are capable of bearing ; for if they do not, the Consequence is either that they throw it up again, or run the Risk of losing

their Lives, as this Mouse did. Besides all this, the other Parts of the Body are envious of the Stomach, seeing that they have all to work hard, that he alone may be gratified ; and when they can no longer support him, they let him fall, and tumble him into his Grave. I found that I was pursuing the same Path, and therefore adopted the System of eating light Dinners, and left off Suppers entirely ; and though at first this annoyed me not a little, yet I soon found that Perseverance will subdue the worst Habits. Those who give themselves up to Gluttony, should be aware of the Danger to which they expose themselves ; for Persons of the same Age are not always the same, nor is Food always of one Quality. It is not astonishing, that he who has been fat from his Infancy, should remain so ; for his Limbs are gradually taught to sustain and carry him. But when a Person, naturally thin and

weak, becomes fat in a short Time, one is apt to suspect that his Life will not be of long Duration. As I restricted myself in my Eating and Drinking at Night, I found that my Fatness began to diminish, and that I was in every Respect more light and active. For Laziness certainly disables and *cripples* Man. In my Case it had the Effect of making me dissatisfied ; which, with the Assistance of certain Flatterers, caused the Prince whom I served to waver in his Affection for me ; and this made me less inclined to serve him. For great Lords, like other Men, are not only subject to the Stars, but to their Passions and Appetites : and the greater they are, so much the sooner do they become tired of the Conduct of their Servants ; requiring those who serve them to renounce their own Will, and make it accord with their Master's. It is reasonable, indeed, that they who make up their Minds

to serve, should sacrifice their Wishes to the Person who provides for them: for all desire to be well served.

Though I have known many Masters of so compassionate a Disposition, as to bear with much Goodness and Patience the Negligence of their Servants; yet the contrary is more common.

CHAP. XII.

Marcos, by an unfortunate Concurrence of Events, removes from a Palace to a Dungeon—Interior View of his Abode.

IN consequence of the little Notice my Master took of me, I found myself at Liberty to wander about at Night;—not in unlawful Pursuits: for, in the first place, I was too old for this; and in the next, my Distresses had not left me sufficiently at ease to resort to Practices of bad Example. Nor is it right, at any Age, to adopt such a Mode of Life. But the Summer Nights at Madrid are well calculated for those who enjoy to walk in the fresh Air, after the burning Heat of the Day. I went out every Night with some Friends, (counting our Beads) not towards the Prado, but to retired Streets, that we might avoid the great

Concourse of People; for though there is so great an Abundance of these Streets, one always finds in each of them a sufficient number of Persons to furnish one with Society. We had one Night extended our Walk nearly as far as Leganitos, when my Companion said to me: “ You had better stop and rest here, as you are *old*, and appear fatigued.” I was piqued at this, and said to him: “ Have you a mind to run with me for a Wager? And then we shall be able to decide which of the two is the oldest Man.” He laughed, and replied that he had no Objection. We placed ourselves side by side for the Race: but even in this simple Diversion, the Devil found Means to persecute me. There was a young Man standing at the Door of a House, which we conceived to be his own; and we asked him to hold our Cloaks and Swords for us while we were running. We had hardly begun our Race, when a Woman began to cry out:

“Oh! they have killed me by stabbing me in the Face!” And she had scarcely finished her Exclamation, when two or three Alguacils made their Appearance; and perceiving us running along, they seized me first, as I had got a-head of my Companion in the Race, and then they got hold of him: for there are a great many Tribunals in Madrid, and in each of them more Wands (of Office) than there are Days in the Year; and to each Wand five or six Vagabonds, who have to provide themselves with Meat, Drink, and Clothing, from the Profits of their Office. They laid Hands on us, as Persons flying from Justice. On their asking for our Swords, we directed them to the House where we had left them; but the young Man (who did not live there) had run away with them and our Cloaks. As they detected us in a Falsehood, (which we had not told,) they conducted us to the Woman who had been wounded; and she,

enraged by the Injury she had received, said that he who had wounded her, took immediately to his Heels; and as we were found running, she confirmed the Suspicions of the Alguacils, by adding, that without doubt we were the guilty Persons. They carried us without Swords or Cloaks to the Town Prison, into which I entered with all the Confusion imaginable; not at having challenged a Man to run with me at my Time of Life, but at the Thoughts of entering a Prison without Cloak or Sword. There was a great deal of Uproar on our being admitted, as our Crime appeared to have been very great:—that of two Individuals, no longer Boys, nor belonging to the first Class of Society, committing such a cruel Act against a poor defenceless Woman! The Person that actually committed the Offence, as I afterwards learned, followed us towards the Prison: and if the Alguacils had been what they ought to be,

they would not have made such an infamous Charge against us. They regarded not Justice, but their own Profit, or they would have informed themselves of the true State of the Case; and the Capture of the Delinquent would have been favourable to them, while my Character would have been free from Imputation.

If they had considered the Matter fairly, they would have known that two Men running quietly along without Cloaks, Swords, or Hats; without Dagger, Knife, or other offensive Weapon; and running in Pairs, could not have got out of their House unperceived, on such an Affair as this; and that there was not found in the whole Street, any Instrument whatever, with which the Deed could have been performed.

They did not even ask a Question of any Person casually present, with a View of discovering the Truth, as is commonly done on like Occasions. And if one allows, that the

Alguacils wished to form a right Judgment of the Case, their Haste in carrying us away, gave them no Time to examine the Matter ; for they seemed to fear lest, by so doing, they should introduce Innovations into their Mode of acting.

They put Fetters on us, and reported the Case to the Lieutenant ; who, receiving from the Alguacils such Information as they thought proper to give him, came to the Prison with the Intention of putting us to Torture.

But, on hearing what I have related above, and finding, when he took each of us aside, that we agreed in our Story, he became perplexed, and deferred giving any Decision. We remained, however, two or three Days in Irons. In the mean Time he was endeavouring to gain Information on the Subject : and, not finding the Delinquent, the Evidence of our being found running when the Assault was made, induced them to leave

us in a State of Oblivion. They threw us into a Dungeon, where we found a Prisoner, who had been detained there a long Time. He was of a florid Complexion, of a bad Disposition, with Mustaches which reached to his Ears, of which he was very proud, for they were so large and twisted, that they appeared like the Ends of large Wax candles. This Man held the whole of the Prison, in a manner, under his Controul; for the Prisoners did nothing but what he wished. The younger People trembled at the Sight of him, and served him with great Punctuality; and no one else ventured to give any Orders without he liked it; and if they ever did, he would twist his Mustache, and say: “ By the Life of the King then, if the Rogue offends me, I will give him and his Employers a good Drubbing.” So that during the short Time he was out of the Dungeon, there was no such Thing as living; for he was, in truth,

the Marshal of the Prison, and so quarrelsome, that it made them all fearful of being involved in Ruin by his mischievous Proceedings. He became indisposed for two or three Days ; and as he did not quit the Dungeon during that Time, we enjoyed a little Peace through his Absence, which pleased us greatly. However, when he got out again, he returned to his former bad Habits. I became so desperate at this Treatment, that I determined to play him some Trick, which should have the Effect of confining him for a Length of Time to the Dungeon ; and on talking the Matter over with my Companion, he advised me to take care what I did, lest I should add to the Duration of our Confinement ; and asking me what I could do that would prevent his going out, I replied, that I would cut off one of his Mustaches. “ For the Love of God,” said he, “ do not expose yourself to so great a Danger !” “ I do not

ask your Advice, but your Assistance;" rejoined I. He was in the habit of sleeping with his Mouth uppermost, to avoid discomposing his Mustaches. I caused a large Pair of Scissars to be well sharpened, and then let him and the rest of the Inmates of the Dungeon go to Bed before ourselves; for we were now become so accustomed to the Place, that we could lie down without disturbing any Body. I took my Scissars when he was under the Influence of his first Sleep, and my Companion lighting me, I closed my Shears upon his Mustache with so much Dexterity, that I carried it off at once, without waking him, or any of the Prisoners perceiving it, except my Companion, who felt himself so inclined to laugh that he was very near waking him; for as the remaining Mustache was so large, he appeared like the Bull of Hercules, that had lost one of his Horns. We slept that Night; and I pretended to be ill, complain-

ing of the Hardness of the Bed. I contrived, however, to get up just before him, telling my Beads whilst I was rising, to have the Opportunity of observing how he bore his Misfortune. On his getting up from his Bed, all the other Prisoners looked at him with Astonishment, without uttering a Word. But he exclaimed, as soon as he got out of the Dungeon: “ Ho, there! Rascals, bring me some Water to wash my Hands.” One of them immediately brought him a Jug of warm Water, and pouring it out for him, he washed his Hands. He then began to wash his Face; and taking hold of the untouched Mustache with his right Hand, he took up Water again, and put up his left Hand four or five Times to feel for the other Mustache; but not finding it there, he got into such a Rage, that, without uttering a Syllable, he stuffed that which was still in being into his Mouth, and began gnawing it as he retired into his

Dungeon. I observed, loud enough for him to hear me, “ This is the greatest Piece of Knavery I ever heard of. To treat an honourable Man so ill, in a Matter in which he took so deep an Interest !” These, and other Remarks I made, in order to remove any Suspensions he might entertain of me.

Reflecting impartially on this Subject, I maintain that it may be reasonable enough for a Man in a superiour Rank of Life to wish to be treated with Honour and Respect. But an unhappy Wight in the midst of his Misery, and in the Mire of the Earth, (in which Light I consider a Prison,) who is proud and haughty, deserves to be brought low by the poorest Insect. Who would expect to find Captivity and Pride, Necessity and Boasting, or Hunger and Levity, united? Prisons were made to restrain licentious, bad Dispositions; not for the Provocation of Insults. Though there

are some Barbarians so lost to Shame, that, either through Desperation, or because they wish to be considered valiant, (being in fact Lambs for Meekness,) convert themselves during their Captivity into Lions; though in a Situation where, with the utmost Humility and Anxiety of Heart, they ought to supplicate for Mercy, let their Imprisonment be just or unjust.

Our Friend wound up the Business by cutting off his saffron-coloured Beard; and, as one Misfortune generally follows at the Heels of another, he was summoned, in the midst of his Distress, to give an Account of himself to Persons commissioned to inquire into his Offence. “He is a Noviciate,” said the Proctor; “having become a Lay-Friar.” “Bring him hither,” said the Lieutenant. He was obliged to come forth, and made his Appearance with all the Shame and Humility in the world. For his whole Strength had consisted in his Mustaches.

as Sampson's had in his Hair. On his entering the Hall, the Laughter was so general, that the Lieutenant said to him : " You now make a very respectable Appearance, and well have you managed Matters, having saved them the Trouble of shaving you, when you get on board the Gallies." To which he replied : " Your Worship speaks as my Judge ; but no one else would have dared to say this to me." They then read his Accusation to him ; which charged him with having stabbed a poor miserable Man in a Public House, before ten or a dozen Witnesses ; and on naming them, the Aggressor said : " I hope your Worship will be pleased to take Notice what Sort of Witnesses these are, who swear against a Man of my Consequence : four Catchpoles, and as many Prostitutes." " What !" exclaimed the Lieutenant, " did you expect that in such a House as *that*, we should have found the Prior of Atocha, or some of the Bare

footed Friars as Witnesses? You have not made a good Story of it."

They then locked him up again in the Dungeon; and from that Day he always went by the Name of "the shaved Friar."

As for us, they set us at Liberty; but not free of Expence. I do not mean to commend myself for what I did on this Occasion; for I know very well, we are not to do Evil that Good may come of it. But then again, I also know, that it is necessary to sacrifice one quarrelsome Individual to save all the rest. It is surely allowable to banish that Person from our Society, who is a Disgrace to it. He that has a proper Respect for himself, will entertain it without assuming an insolent Superiority over others. For Bullies, by their tyrannical Behaviour, make all the World their Enemies. The quarrelsome meet with Checks from humbler Characters, when they least expect it. I have always observed, that

when a reserved, modest Man addresses with Firmness one of these arrogant Boasters, seeking to brow-beat others, he soon yields and becomes silent. They are like the Wheels of a Coach, which, when they are going over the Stones, make a Noise, but on getting on the level Ground, proceed silently along. It was necessary to humble this impertinent Jackanapes; and no Means were so proper, as to lighten him of the great Care he was under, with the two Foxes Tails he carried about him.

CHAP. XIII.

How Marcos was consoled for his long Imprisonment.

AT the Expiration of three Months, as I said before, we were released from Prison ; but the Expences of our Deliverance were so great, that we had nothing remaining after paying them. In order to provide ourselves with a Dinner the following Day, I was obliged to sell a Pair of Cordovan Boots, and my Companion an old rat-eaten Portmanteau : a proper Appendage to a poor Squire ; who, for want of a Cupboard, or other Convenience, converts his Portmanteau into a Receptacle for Rats, by depositing his scanty Morsels in it.

While we were disposing of our Pledges, God sent a worthy Gentleman to our Assistance ; who, after lamenting much the Account he had heard of our Misfortunes,

told us that a certain great Nobleman who had been made acquainted with them, had sent him to inquire how much our Imprisonment had cost us; and being moved with Compassion, he had entrusted him with a sufficient Number of Doubloons to give us what might be necessary for our Relief.

I knew the Gentleman who spoke; but before I declared myself, I said to him: "This Act, Sir, must proceed from God, who knows our Necessities to be so great, that we are reduced to sell our very Clothes, to provide ourselves with a Dinner. Our Expences amount to One hundred Crowns, a little more or less." On my saying this, he immediately took out fifty Doubloons, and gave them to us. As soon as I felt them in my Hand, I said: "This is the Amount of the *Cost*:—but with respect to the Pleasure you derived from *your Revenge*, and the Mortification we endured in consequence, what Recompence can be sufficient?" For I

knew him well that Night, when he followed us to the Prison. He answered me wisely : “ Your being taken, was your Misfortune ; the paying for it, is my Duty. As I did not inflict the Misfortune, it is not for me to satisfy you for it : if every unhappy Person could be relieved, there would be no Unhappiness in the World. Though my good Fortune prevented my Suffering, I have notwithstanding sufficient Tenderness of Heart to incline me to Pity : perhaps another Man might not have reflected on either of these Points. Many Misfortunes happen to us by the secret Appointment of Heaven, of which we cannot demand an Explanation. Misfortunes are not of our seeking, neither was it my Fault that you took to running that Night ; for that was entirely influenced by your own Will. And I can assure you, that the Thoughts of that Circumstance grieve me to the Soul ; not on account of the Stabbing, but of your con-

sequent Distress. The Misfortune was, that the Woman's Face and your Running-match should have come in the Way at the same Moment. You have conducted yourselves so prudently under your Calamity, that I have been envious of you ;—for he that supports himself patiently under Adversity, is Master of his Actions; and real Misfortunes cannot readily assail him. As I have the Power of recompensing you for this Injury, so would I, if I had the Means, place good Fortune at your Disposal, and make you supremely happy. But though, on the whole, you have been unfortunate in this Affair, you were at least successful in getting out of that Adventure of the Mustache. By your Penetration you have discovered me in my Disguise; so have I you, in spite of your Dissembling." Although the Gentleman spoke well, I was so contented and rejoiced at seeing the precious Metal, (so like the Light of the Sun,) in my

Possession, that I knew not how to reply to him, except to thank him, and to compare his Wisdom to his compassionate Disposition. I found myself so weighed down with Miseries and Distresses, that I determined to leave the Court, after having passed some unlucky Days in Servitude, which has been forced upon me by Circumstances, though I abhor the Kind of Life as I do the Sight of an Adder.

I went to take my Leave of a noble Gentleman, a Friend of mine, whom I had not seen for a long Time; and finding him melancholy and unhappy, I inquired the Cause. He replied, that he could neither eat nor sleep, nor take Delight in any one Thing. “ Well,” said I, “ if you will do what I recommend, I will cure you of all these three Complaints.” “ That,” said he, “ I will certainly do, though it cost me my whole Fortune.” “ Come then,” rejoined I; “ get up To-morrow Morning at Day-break, and I will take you to a Place

where you may gather an Herb which will cure you of all your Disorders. He arose (or rather I made him get up) the next Morning, and ordered his Coach to be got ready. But I explained to him that the Herb would do him no Good, unless he went on Foot. Leaving the Carriage therefore behind, I led him towards Saint Bernardo, a Convent of Franciscan Friars, and pointing out the Herb to him, I told him it was necessary that he should gather it with his own Hands. I then made him trudge along at such a Rate, that he began panting like a thirsty Setter, and was so fatigued, that he sat down to rest in the Road. On my inquiring whether he felt relieved by reposing himself, he answered in the Affirmative. "But do you know why you feel relieved?" said I: "because you were fatigued. In the easy Chairs in your House, you never find Repose, because you are never fatigued by Exercise."

I then took him as far as the Convent, from whence he returned Home on Foot, with a very good Appetite for his Dinner. He ate and drank with Satisfaction, and then lying down, slept very well. Upon which I remarked to him: “ He that does not weary his Limbs, cannot enjoy Repose; neither can *he* derive Gratification from his Food, who has no Appetite. Well may *he* complain of Illness and Disease, who takes no Exercise;—for Indolence is the greatest Enemy of the Human Frame. Those Horses that are most exercised, possess most Mettle and Activity. The Fish of the Great Ocean, is better than that of the Mediterranean, because the Waves of the former are more agitated than those of the latter; and Men who have led a Life of Labour being more inured to it, are more valuable than those who have lived in the midst of Delights. So it is with every Thing in Life. Whenever one Man is more laborious than another in any Pursuit, he

becomes in Proportion more expert;—that is, provided they start with equal Capacities.

My Friend was greatly pleased with the Result of the Experiment, and from that Day forward persevered in taking Exercise on Foot, Morning and Evening; which brought him into so excellent a State of Health, that he always thanked me for the Stratagem I had used to remove his lazy Habits; and the Consequence was, that he made me a handsome Present.

I remained some Days longer at Madrid in the Quality of Squire and Gentleman. Usher to Doctor Sagredo and his Wife, Doña Mergelina de Aybar, until I left them, or rather, they left me.

CHAP. XIV.

The Squire leaves Madrid for Andalucia—Travelling Anecdotes—A Disquisition on Artificial Memory.

RESOLVING to retire from the Bustle and Confusion of the Court, and to seek Repose in a more temperate Climate than Castile, I went into Andalucia, where the Heathens fixed the Abode of the Blessed Spirits, according to their Mode of Faith;—saying, that on passing the River Lethe, (which still preserves the Name of *Guadalete*) they lost all Remembrance of the Things of the Earth, and of every past Event. The Excellence of the Temperature, the Abundance of Supplies, the Serenity of the Heavens and Earth, led them into this Error. However, the mildest Climates are the fittest for old People; and having a little Money, I purchased a Mule, which they let me have

cheap, because she had Spavins on her Legs, and had lost an Eye. But her Paces were tolerably good ; and I set out, recommending myself to God and my blessed Guardian Angel.

I travelled alone ; for a Man had better walk than be guided in travelling by the Will of another. There is nothing more wearisome than to stop merely because another wishes it, and not because we are tired ourselves. In short, as I had Money, I chose to travel in my own Way. The Heat was very great ; and as I had set out early, in order to rest at Noon in the Inn of Darazutan, the scorching Effect of the Morning Sun, together with the Exhalations proceeding from the Shrubs, &c. was so violent that it burnt my Face, and I should have stopped a thousand Times, if I had found a convenient Place.

I espied the Inn a long Way off, though the Distance appeared short, from its being

surrounded with Holme, Oaks, and Shrubs; and it seemed to me as if the more I travelled the farther it was removed from my Sight, whilst my Thirst was intolerable. I began to think that I never should reach it; till at last I heard the Musick of Guitars and Voices, which proceeded from the Inn itself. "Now," said I, "I cannot be any longer deceived." And going in, I found a great many People collected there to avoid the Heat. I was rejoiced at seeing an earthen Jar of Water, of which I have always been passionately fond. Having refreshed myself with a Draught, I sat down to listen to the Musick; and as it was pretty good, it proved so agreeable to the Ear, that in this retired Place, full of Shrubs, and so entirely separated from any inhabited Part, its Melody seemed sweeter than in Royal Palaces, where there are other Things to amuse one. As the Heat was now in full Force, and the Inn full of People, a temporary Suspension

of the Musick was necessary to enable us to take our Repose with some Degree of Comfort. For this Science not only animates the exteriour Feeling, but even mitigates and suspends the Passions of the Soul ; and it is so arbitrary, that it does not bestow itself on all indiscriminately, but merely on those whom Nature has created with Inclinations to receive it. But those who are born with this Taste, are fit for all the other Sciences ; and therefore we ought to instruct Children in this Science first, for two Reasons : one is, that we may discover what Talent they possess ; the other, that we may engage them in a Pursuit so virtuous in itself, that it captivates the Attention of Children by its Sweetness.

The Ear is so much the Judge in this Science, that I recollect once asking a young Man to sing, who *had* sung remarkably well ; but having become deaf, though his Voice was as good as ever, he committed

such Blunders, that every Body that heard him began laughing. For, in truth, the Ear is the Modulator of the Human Voice.

These Musicians sang with so much Taste, that after taking our Dinner, we enjoyed our Siesta very much. One of the Party took out a *Watch* to see what the Hour was ; and on his bestowing great Praise on the Invention of Watches, I remarked that the Information he derived from his Watch, might be acquired by means of a Straw, or a little Stick, by observing the Length of the Shadow ; or, when the Sun is not out, by means of a Glass of Water, through which a small Hole should be drilled, and then the Hour is pointed out by the Decrease of the Water. There are other Inventions which answer the same Purpose.

The rest of our Time was passed by each praising his own Profession, and the Inventions most nearly allied to it, taking the Hint from the Conversation on Watches.

We treated of Astronomy and Musick, and of the Invention of the Artificial Memory ; for there was a Gentleman present, an Auditor of Seville, who performed Wonders by means of it. An old Squire* who sat in the Chimney-corner, observed : “ None of the Inventions you have mentioned, Gentlemen, can be compared with that of the Needle.”† This Remark set them all laughing ; which offended him, and he said in great Anger : “ If what I have said does not appear correct, do me the Favour to mend it by means of your *Astronomical Knowledge*.” On which the Licentiate Villaseñor remarked : “ Every one praises that in which he finds himself most expert. Perhaps this Gentleman Squire may have been induced to speak highly of this Invention, from having

* I have omitted to mention how this old Squire was employing himself—the Spanish verb, “ *espulgarse*,” not affording a *desirable* translation into English. *Tr.*

† Alluding, probably, to the Magnetick Needle. *Tr.*

been much accustomed to make use of the Needle." "I am no Tailor," retorted the other; "but a Squire so qualified, and of such high Antiquity, that all my Ancestors, from Nuño Rasura to Lain Calvo, have served the Counts of Lemos: and if I travel on Foot now, it is merely because my Horses are at grass, at the Bridges of Eume." And having said this, he clapped an old Glove upon the Hilt of his Sword, and betook himself to the Shade of the Highway.

"It is just," said I, "that every one should value himself on his Calling. There was a Hangman at Madrid, who, wishing to shew his Son, by a Gibbet that he had in his House, how he could hang a Man dexterously,—and the Son not taking kindly to the Profession, but, on the contrary, finding great Fault with it,—the Hangman said to him: 'The Devil take you, for you like nothing that is respectable. However, you shall

suffer for it, for I will put you Apprentice to a Shoemaker, and then you may bite the Shoemakers' Wax, you low-minded Fellow!"

We were now on the point of leaving the House, when the Auditor said: "Some one certainly told me yesterday, that Marcos de Obregon, a Man of Talents and Taste, was in search of a Horse in order to travel this Road; and I have a great Desire to be acquainted with him." "It is very true," said I; "for I saw him looking for some Mode of Conveyance." "Do you know him then, Sir?" said the Auditor, Don Hernando de Villaseñor. "Yes, Sir," replied I, "he is a great Friend of mine." We mounted our Steeds, and set out together, my Companion continuing to ask me a great many Questions about Mr. Marcos de Obregon. I informed him of some Particulars perfectly new—so much so, that they had never passed from me to a second Person; and as I mentioned them slowly.

the Auditor immediately repeated them by Heart. He admired my Stories, but I was much more struck with his Memory. I went on saying a great many Things to him, and he repeating them after me. He acknowledged that it was an artificial Memory; but that, in order to learn it, one must have a very good natural one, otherwise it would cost one a great deal of Labour and Difficulty to acquire it. I observed, “that the Memory certainly appears to be a divine Gift, for that it makes past Events present; but still I consider it as the Scourge of *unfortunate* Men; for it is continually bringing before them their bad Success, their past Injuries, and present Misfortunes; suspicious as to the Future, and the Want of Confidence they are apt to feel in every Thing. And as Life is, at any rate, short, it is rendered shorter by this constant Recurrence to distressing Subjects. And consequently, with such as these, *the Art of Forgetting*

would be preferable to that of remembering. How many Lives has Memory cost, through Offences which, if they had not been remembered, would not have been revenged ! How many dishonourable Acts have been committed by Women, from recollecting ill-requited Favours ! It is an excellent Thing, no doubt, to possess a good natural Memory : but to waste one's Time in seeking to retain two or three thousand Sentences, when one might employ it in Exercises of the Mind, I do not consider a great Proof of Wisdom. Because to help the Memory, we now have the Invention of Printing ; Images, Pictures, Statues, Writings, Edifices, Stones ; besides Rocks, Rivers, Fountains, Trees, and other Things without Number : and as to the Understanding, it is Nature alone that bestows it, and enriches it by the reading of wise Authors, and by Intercourse with learned Friends. I have seen many Authors who treat on the Subject of Artificial Memory ; but

I have never met with any of their Works which distinguished them as Men of extraordinary Talent. For, though Cícero, Quintilian, and Aristotle, touch on this Subject, they have not written Books on it, as being inferior to Works of the Understanding. Thus Don Lorenzo Ramirez de Prado, a very accomplished Scholar, as well in Poetry as in Philosophy, has this artificial Memory quite at command, and does Wonders with it; not considering it an Object of Importance, however, but merely using it as a Curiosity: for to him who abounds in so many Acquirements, this should not be wanting. And the History they recount of that great Lyrick Poet, Simonides, who, when a House fell down upon a large Party of People, and they were so disfigured that no one knew them, pointed out the Part of the Room in which each had been, and called them all over by Name. This I consider to have been an Act, not of artificial, but of natural Memory:

for a Man who went to eat and drink at a Banquet with the Freedom which was then in use, would not wait to put Images and Figures in imaginary Places, natural or artificial, nor to search his Memory, loading his Brain with a greater Burthen than the Wine had put into it, at a Time when so little Abstemiousness was used ; but, being present at the Time, he had casually noticed whereabouts each Individual had stationed himself.

The Author of this Work having left his Father's House when a Boy, and not returning to it till he was grey-headed, knew, and called by Name, all those whom he had left as Children, and found again with long Beards and grey Hairs ; nor did he fail to repeat one Name or Incident relative to all those who came with Astonishment to see him. And is it not related as a wonderful Instance of Memory, that Cinca, the Ambassador of King Pyrrhus, in the two Days that he remained in Rome, knew, and called by Name

every individual Inhabitant? Mithridates, King of Pontus, negotiated with twenty-two Nations that were subject to him, in the Language of each. Julius Cæsar, at the same Time, read, wrote, dictated, and listened to Things of the utmost Importance; and of this Gift particular Mention is made in History. But there are some ordinary Men who do Wonders with their natural Memory. In Gibraltar there was a Steward of Don Francisco de Ahumada Mendoza, whose Name was Alonso Mateos, who knew every one of thirty thousand Head of Cattle that there were in the Saucedá;* he knew also every one of the Owners, and named them all, giving to each his own Cattle. He likewise knew all the Cattle Merchants, that came from different Parts of the Country, after once seeing them.

* One or two of the Cattle Factors that frequent Smithfield are able to perform this, although they are entrusted with different Cattle every Week. Tr.

I have mentioned these Facts to shew that the Memory of Simonides need not have been artificial, and that it may appear evident that merely by exercising it, the Memory is enlarged and improved ; as one sees in the Case of these Overseers of Cattle, many of whom, though rude uneducated Men, can do as much as the one I have spoken of. In Madrid there is a Gentleman, Don Luis Ramirez, who, after seeing any Play represented, will return Home and write it all down, without missing a single Letter, or erring in a Verse. But there are divers Sorts of Memories, some which enable the Possessors to recollect *Words*, and others *Things*; such as Pedro Mantuano, who, of the numberless Histories he has read, not only has not forgotten them, but at whatever Moment one asks him about them, or they become the Topick of Conversation, they are as much present to his Mind, as at the Time when he was reading them ; and after

seeing the proper Names contained in them, and the Verses, a second Time, he never forgets one of them.”

The Auditor had remained silent all this Time ; and now praising greatly what I had been saying, he observed, that the artificial Memory was certainly more a Thing of Ostentation, than to be continually wearying one-self by practising it. And speaking in Praise of my Character (without knowing me), he said he was very anxious to meet with Marcos de Obregon ; one Reason for which was, the favourable Account he had received of his Understanding, and another that they belonged to neighbouring Towns ; he being a Native of Cañete-la-Real, and Obregon of Ronda. And then he asked me what Sort of an Appearance he had, and what kind of Manners and Conduct. I replied, that his Figure and Appearance greatly resembled my own, and that his Conduct and Behaviour were just the same

as mine ; for being such intimate Friends, I copied from him, and he from me. “ Doubtless,” exclaimed the Auditor, “ if he possesses the Affability that you have shewn, he well deserves the great Character that the World has bestowed on him.”

The Auditor continued treating and making much of me all the Way, in a Manner that proved his hereditary and acquired Nobility, by his Spirit, Kindness, and Liberality. We crossed the Sierra Morena together, observing many extraordinary Things. For as it is so extensive, wide, and long, that it traverses all Spain, France, and Italy, (though under different Names) until it terminates at the Sea, by the *Dardanelles*, it naturally furnishes many Objects to remark and admire. We met with an Adder with two Heads, in a Piece of sandy Ground, at which the Auditor was much astonished, saying, that he had heard

of such Things before, but never believed that they existed. “Neither do I believe now,” said I, “that one Body can have two Heads.” We observed that he could not move well, and that he did not fly from other Animals. I desired the young Man who had charge of the Mules, to give him a Blow with his Stick, which he did, and the Adder immediately disgorged a Toad, which he had swallowed, all but the Head. This undeceived us, and it ought to have the same Effect on many others who believe in such Things.

“I dare say,” said the Auditor, “that it is the same with many other Things of which we hear, though we never see them; such as the Salamander.” “I was incredulous in this Particular,” said I, “until I heard two Persons of Credit mention that in a small Place near Cuença, called Alcantuz, a Glass Furnace having

fallen down, they found a Salamander sticking to the very Sides of the Bricks , where they feed the Fire. And being creditable, respectable Persons, I believed the Story; nor have they been deceived, who have always held it for Truth.

CHAP. XV.

Sprightly Conversation on the Road—A young Wit introduced to the Reader.

AS Man is naturally a social Being, the Auditor was so well pleased with my Society, that he would not consent to our separating so long as we could follow the same Road. He had, and still possesses a very bright Understanding, which prompted him to put a great many very lively Questions, to which I replied in the best Manner I could. And if any decent-looking Man of his own Profession joined us, he would draw out Questions from him, or give him an Opportunity of putting them; and then he would reply to them with great Good-humour. A Clergyman of a neighbouring Town attached himself to us; and as he travelled along reciting his Litany, in so loud

a Tone, that the Oaks and Cork-trees could almost hear him, he interrupted our Conversation, and fulfilled his Duty indifferently. The Auditor asked him whether he could not delay his Ceremony till Night, when he might perform it with the Quiet and Devotion that were necessary. "Oh! Sir," replied the Clergyman, "the Church bestows this Salary upon us, that we should pray even while we are travelling; not wishing to impose this upon us at Night, when we are weary of our Day's Work, and have other Matters to think of." "The Church," replied the Auditor, "does not educate Clergymen, that they may become Couriers, but to say Prayers." "That is a very good Answer," rejoined the other; "but how shall I be able, while I am travelling, to repeat at Night all the Service of the Morning, and thus satisfy my Conscience?" "Pray," said the Auditor, "if an hundred Ducats were owing you, and were to become due on

St. John's Day, would you receive them, if they were offered to you on the preceding Evening?" "Yes, certainly," replied he. "Well then," rejoined the Auditor, "God will act in the same Way by you: for, to perform obligatory and meritorious Services *in advance*, shews an Inclination to do all in one's Power; and God is so good a Paymaster, that he will also pay before-hand." The Priest was greatly amused with this Pleasantry.

Soon afterwards we saw a Lad a-head of us; and as he did not travel so fast as our Horses, we came up with him presently; when the Auditor said to him: "Where are you going, my Lad?" "Towards Old-age, Sir," said the Boy. "No, no, that is not what I mean;" rejoined the Auditor. "But what Road do you take?" "The Road takes me, Sir; I don't take the Road," replied the Boy.

AUDITOR. "To what Part of the Country do you belong?"

BOY. "To Saint Mary's, all the world over."

AUDITOR. "I mean to ask you, what Land you were born in?"

BOY. "I was not born in any Land, Sir; I was born in a Stable."

AUDITOR. "You play well at Questions and Answers, Boy."

BOY. "However well I may play, I always lose."

AUDITOR. "Have you any Father?"

BOY. "To avoid having a great many, I am now running away. For they wanted to make a Friar of me, and to give me so many Fathers, that I could not endure it."

AUDITOR. "And do you think it preferable to post along in this Way, like a Courier?"

BOY. "A Man may well make himself a Courier, to avoid being curried."

We laughed heartily at the Wit of the Lad, and arriving at a small Inn, by the

Side of a pretty deep Brook, between two Hills, the Mule-driver said to us: “ It will be best to stop here, where they will entertain us very well, and the Hostess is a nice tidy Woman; whereas, if we pursue our Journey, we shall have to travel three Hours in the Dark.” His Arguments soon prevailed, for he undertook that we should be provided with Beds. And indeed it appeared that he was quite as well acquainted with the Hostess, as he ought to have been. We entered the Inn, and the Landlady immediately shewed herself with her pursed-up Mouth. She was dressed in a dark red Gown, with a white linen Slip over it, full of Slashes. “ Well, Sir,” said the Mule-boy; “ what do you think of her?” “ Why, that she looks like a Sweetbread with a Caul on;” replied I. “ And she is habited like a Virgin Martyr,” said the Auditor.

“ That is a good Remark of yours,” rejoined I; “ and as her Chastity is on the

Outside, and the Martyrdom within, the many Brambles one finds in these Parts have torn the former a little." "Aye!" said the Hostess; "every one expresses himself according to the Manner in which he has been brought up."

Observing that she was vexed at my Jest, and that the Lad was becoming angry, I altered my Tone, and said to her: "The Truth is, that you are a very smart, handsome Woman, with a Face much too good for this Place, and suited for a much higher Situation!" This pacified her entirely, for she was a Person of an easy Disposition; and she set some very good Partridges before us, on which we made a hearty Supper. After I had complimented her by remarking that she had treated us like a Court-bred Lady, she said: "There are Beds for you, Gentlemen; though, in consequence of the little Cold we experience here, I am but scantily supplied with Blankets." "There

can be no great Want of them," said the *Friar-boy*; "for those she has put on the Muleteer's Bed, would be sufficient to keep all Burgos and Segovia warm." "Don't jest with me," retorted the Muleteer; "or I will shew you the Stars at Mid-day." "What then, are you the Epiphany?" rejoined the other.

A great many witty Things were said by these two Youths, which made the Time pass away agreeably enough. The Auditor again repeating his Question to the Boy, said: "I insist on your telling me to what Part of the Country you belong?" The Boy replied: "I am an Andalucian, Sir, from the Vicinity of Ubeda, a Native of a Place called Torreperogil; and the Village being but small, finding that I could not put my Wishes in Execution, I stole four Reals from my Father, and ran away to Ubeda. On arriving there, while I was looking at the Houses of Cabos, I saw some People

gaming for Sweetmeats, and instigated by my Desire to eat some of them, I threw in my four Reals; but having lost my Money without gaining the Sweetmeats, I went and leaned against a Pillar of the Piazzas, which one finds there, and remained in that Position till Night, and in a most disconsolate State. An old Man came up to me, and said: "What are you doing here, young Gentleman?" "I am supporting this Column, for fear it should fall, Sir;" said I, "but why do you ask me this Question?" "Because," replied he, "if you have no Place to sleep in, here is a Cloth-dresser's Trough, in which you may stretch yourself out, and take your Repose." "And has this Trough the Power to obliterate my Misfortunes?" replied I. "What!" said the good Man, "do you begin so early to complain of Misfortunes?" "Why should you object," said I, "to my complaining of Misfortunes, when from the Moment I left

my Father's House, I have experienced nothing else?" "From whence come you?" inquired he. "From a great many Leagues off," replied I. "You should consider, my Son," added he, "that Vexations were made for Man; and he who has not Firmness to resist them, is soon subdued by them; and as you have begun to experience them so early in Life, you may comfort yourself with thinking that they will bear more lightly upon you when you become a Man. Those who, as one may say, are but just hatched, can have no Experience in the Ways of the World, and are therefore incapable of estimating the many good Things with which it abounds. But a Series of Troubles teaches a Man to know himself, and renders him capable of every Undertaking. I left my Father's House at your Age, and by my good Conduct, have acquired the honourable Office of Clerk of the Market in this City." "You have prospered very

well," said I; "you have no Cause to complain; but how can one expect *him* to succeed, who is destitute of a *Farthing* to begin with?" "If you have come from so great a Distance," continued the old Man, "you may well have spent your Money, and encountered so many Difficulties. Where is your native Town situated?" "In Torreperogil," replied I. He laughed, and I observed: "Why then, I suppose it appears to you too soon to begin reckoning my Troubles? But on my leaving Home, which was by Night, I crept into a Vineyard, where I devoured so many Grapes, covered with Dew, that if I had not found Means of getting out, I should have burst, nor should I have been able to reach Ubeda; and when I did arrive, groaning under this first Misery, as Ill-luck would have it, I played for the only four Reals I had, and lost them. I was thus left pennyless, hungry, and without *Lodging*, or *Bed*." "Well, go to that trough," said

he, “ and you will find them both there.” “ I took his Advice, and arranging the Litter I found there, stretched myself upon it, and slept a little. But at Midnight, the Change was so great, from serene mild Weather, to Storm and Tempest, that I thought I should not have survived till Morning. For the Wind entered the Piazzas with great Fury, whirling the Dust into my Eyes, and creating a Pool of Water for the rest of my Body; while, to add to my Distress, the Pigs that were wandering about in the Streets to seek for Food, repaired to the Cloth-worker’s Benches and Troughs, to shelter themselves from the Tempest; and imagining that the one in which I was, remained empty, a Dozen of them crowded into it, grunting, and turning up the Straw and Dung with their Snouts; all of which begrimed my Face sadly. However, I endured, and even encouraged their Presence, merely on account of the Warmth they at-

forded me ; and though not without Offence to my Nostrils, I made it out till Morning ; not very clean, to be sure, nor smelling very sweet, and with a few Blows on my Carcase to boot. For a Boy came before Day-break to drive away the Pigs with an ash Stick of about three Inches thick ; and thinking that he was beating them, he laid some good Blows also across my Shoulders, which deprived me of Sleep, and of all Inclination to lie longer. I got clear of my ill Fortune for this Time, though it has never forsaken me since, for I always managed to go from bad to worse ; and wherever I went, either some Evil sought me, or I sought it. For whenever Boys badly inclined, do any Thing good, it is Necessity that compels them to it. I went from Ubeda to Cordova, where I met with a young Friar, who was going to study at Alcalá. He asked me if I would accompany him ; and I replied that I would with great Pleasure ; for he lived

very well, from the Alms given him at the different Towns and Inns on the Road. He was so well pleased with my Prattle, that he spoke highly in my Favour at a Monastery of his Order, where they invested me readily with the Habit. Though I had often heard of the Temptation of Hunger, which the Novices have to endure, I did not believe it, till Experience convinced me of its Truth. For when we had finished our Dinner, I was glad to carry off a small Roll, from the Man who had Charge of the Refectory, and eat it unnoticed in my Cell. But the second Time I attempted this, they detected me, and used me very ill. However, I made use of a very good Stratagem; for I managed to stick five or six Nails in the Boards of my Bed underneath, and getting hold of the Bread, I ran away, and stuck it on one of the Nails. They followed me close, but not being able to find the Roll, they shifted the Blame to another. I passed

some Days in this Way; breakfasting and eating a Luncheon much to my Satisfaction, while others were suffering for my Offence; and the Secret would have remained secure to this Hour, if it had not been for a Trick I played the Master of the Novices. He had received a Present of a Basket of delicious Cakes, two of which I contrived to snatch away, while his Head was turned; and, pretending that I was going in search of something, I was off in a Moment, and fastened them on the Nails. I then returned very sedately, and sat down to read. The Master missed his Cakes, and immediately went to make a general Search for them in our Rooms. He examined my Person cautiously, and even my Books; and not finding what he sought, he stooped down, and thrust half his Body under my Bed to see whether they were there. At last he said: "There is nothing here, let us proceed elsewhere." I was now very well pleased, con-

sidering my Danger over. But as he withdrew his Head from under the Bed, the back Part of it encountered one of the Nails ; and, as it hurt him, he turned his Head round to see what it was, and, alas ! discovered his Cakes and my Rolls ! They laid Hands on me at once, and soon converted my Body into the Appearance of a Painter's Pallet. And now pray, Sir, is it not better to act the Part of a Courier, than to be starved, and thumped in this Manner ? They left me that Night, as they thought, well secured. However, I found Means to get hold of my Clothes, and ran away towards the high Road. But they soon missed me, and sent two young Lay Brothers in pursuit of me ; and as they were better acquainted with the Country than I, they got some Way in front of me by Morning, when I observed them in such a Situation, that it did not appear possible to escape from their Grasp. But as Necessity is the Mother of

Invention, I found my Safety, in this Instance, among a Parcel of Bee-hives, close by the Road-side. For as soon as I espied the Enemy, I ran into this Place, overturning above twenty Hives in my Way. I then crept in amongst them, and remained motionless (for while in this State, the Bees will not attack one); and my Pursuers coming up to seize me, the Bees, in Defence of their Territory, received them *Vi et Armis*. in Revenge for the Storming of their Castles; and as they threw their Hands about to drive the Bees away, the more they moved, the greater was the Number of Bees that swarmed upon them. The whole Army being now disturbed, they forsook the Tents of the Rear-guard, and so immense a Body came forward to succour the Advanced-guard, that the two Executioners were soon left in a State of complete Darkness.

“Being a Spectator of the Battle which had been waged on my Account, and observing

that I could now retreat in safety, I crept out from the Camp on All-fours, with the greatest possible Silence, making my Escape among some *Garden Pots*, which seemed to have been posted there for the Purpose of concealing me ; being more numerous even than the Bees about my Adversaries, into whose Wristbands and Shirt Collars they entered, settling themselves there in such a Way as not to admit of their making any Defence. Though the first Thing they did was to charge them in incredible Numbers, in the Forehead and Eyes, leaving them soon so blind, that on their attempting to leave the Place they could not distinguish the Outlet. The Owner of the Hives hastened to appease his Soldiers, armed with their defensive Weapons ; and found the two miserable Fellows as black and blue as if they had been violently beaten ; all over Bumps and Bruises : but instead of finding Fault with them for the Confusion they had caused

in his Camp, he carried them to a considerable Distance from his incensed, angry People, lest they should complete their Destruction. This is now the sixth Day that I have been running away from the Stripes that I should have felt if they had caught me."

The Boy afforded much Amusement and Mirth among the good People at the Public-house, by this Relation of his Adventures. I said to him : "At last, then, you found Mercy among the Bees; and if it had not been for the Injury sustained by the others, this would have been the finest Adventure in the world. But as we have naturally a greater Obligation to take care of ourselves than of others, we sometimes look for Comfort in the Misfortunes of our Neighbours; though a Man is bound not to injure his Neighbour in attempting to attain Good for himself; otherwise, he acts uncharitably." "Be this as it may," replied the Boy, "I have always heard it said, that one is bound to take care

of one-self: for a Lamb once killed a Wolf by running from him, and enticing him over a Pit which the Shepherd had prepared for him, by covering it well with Grass, and laying a dead Adder on the Top of it. The Wolf seemed quite determined to seize him; but the Lamb, running towards the Part where the Shepherd was, reached the Pit, and seeing the Adder, sprang over it: but the Wolf, following his Course, fell in and broke his Legs. And if a Lamb may defend himself at the Expense of another, why should not a Man be allowed to do the same?" After this every one retired to Rest, astonished at the Fluency with which the Boy had expressed himself.

CHAP. XVI.

Marcos takes Leave of his new Friend, and meets with some old Acquaintances.

ON leaving the Inn, we should have been very glad to have had the Boy with us; but he travelled so slowly, that the Auditor gave him some Money, and we left him to pursue his Journey at his own Pace. When he was fairly gone and out of sight, I could not help contemplating in my Mind, the extraordinary Diversity of his Genius, and observed: “How trifling are the Hopes we can entertain of those Boys who evince so much Sharpness and Loquacity at so early an Age: for they seldom possess Depth of Understanding for the Reception of Truth and substantial Virtues. An Understanding capable of great Things, is never found vacillating and changing in Affairs of little

Moment. And, for my part, I entertain better Hopes of him who observes a certain Degree of Silence in early Life, than of one who discloses, by his Volubility, all that his Mind contains. For as the Understanding is the principal Part of the Soul, and the Soul is not loquacious, neither ought a good Understanding to be so. When a Man is once well seasoned, and his Wit exercised in Truth and Experience, he has good Grounds for talking. But when he does not possess this well-founded Capacity, he is given to Talking and bold Assertions, to which I neither give Credit, nor does any one else. In spite of all this, however, those who are fond of talking, are agreeable Companions in a solitary Journey ; for if one listens to them they entertain us, and if one does not listen to them, it affords opportunity, while they are prating, for every one else to ruminate on his own Affairs." The Auditor argued awhile very learnedly, on the Understanding,

the Memory, and Imagination, (but his Arguments cannot well find a Place here); and during the whole Journey, he kept asking me Questions about Marcos de Obregon, with great apparent Affection.

On our Arrival at Cordova, where it became requisite for us to separate, he begged in the kindest Manner that I would explain to my Friend the great Desire he had to know him, and that, if at any Time he should go to Seville, he expected that he would proceed at once to his House. After this, on our arriving at the Bridge of the Guadalquivir, each of us followed his own Road; and having got about a hundred Paces one from the other, I called out to him, so that he might hear me, "Mr. Auditor! I am Marcos de Obregon:" and pushing on as hard as I could, I took the Malaga and Gibraltar Road, for to one of these Places was my Course directed. The Auditor wished to turn back, and call me; but on observing

I got on so fast, he continued his Journey, saying to his Servants: “ It was not without Reason that I found myself so happy in the Society of this Man; for certainly, without knowing who he was, I have contracted an uncommon Friendship for him, which would induce one to do any Thing in the world to serve him.”

I now hastened towards one of those Cities, in the Temperature of which I take great Delight, as they prove agreeable Places of Residence for old People, from the Warmth of their Climate, and the Variety they possess within themselves, as Sea Ports, as from their Vicinity to, and Intercourse with Africa. Besides that, one finds in their Neighbourhood, retired Spots well adapted to Solitude.

I reached Malaga the same Day on which the Brig of the Rock had arrived, of which Juan de Loxa was Captain;—a very valiant Soldier, who had received and given many

Wounds to Moors and Turks. He brought in with him a very valuable Prize. As he was a great Friend of mine, I went to visit him, and after each had bidden the other welcome on his Arrival, he mentioned to me the Circumstance of his having fallen in with a Boat at Sea, which had been driven about terribly by a Storm, and that he had captured in it a young Turkish Lady, and a Gentleman, who appeared to be her Brother. He described her as very beautiful, and the Brother, as a young Man of fine Figure; and both, he said, had so much the Appearance of Spaniards, that he was astonished to learn that they were born in Africa, and were Children of Infidels. I asked him to let me see them; for he kept them strictly guarded, intending to make a Present of them. He replied: "As you have been in Algiers, I wish you, without seeing them, to hear them tell their Story, in order to ascertain whether they speak Truth." He

entered the Room in which they were, while I remained at the Door; and said to them: “Relate to me your true History, for your Captivity being now certain, the Treatment you experience will be regulated by the Truth of what you tell me.” The Youth was very sorrowful, and the poor Girl quite dissolved in Tears and Sighs. But on their Master consoling them a little, the young Man addressed him thus: “Nature itself demands that we should be sorrowful and afflicted at the Loss of our precious Liberty; neither can we do less than feel severely the Absence from our Country, our Parents, and all the Comforts we have been accustomed to enjoy. The very Abandonment of our Property, our Slaves, and Magnificence, excites in us mournful Sensations; but our having failed in the Object of our Voyage, this tortures our Hearts.* My Sister and I, (for that Relationship we certainly hold),

* Literally, tears our Hearts out of our Breasts. *Th.*

were born in Algiers. We are the Children of a Spaniard, who fled from the Kingdom of Valencia to Algiers. He married our Mother, who is a Turk by Nation. Our Father is a Corsair, and by means of his two Galliot, has done great Injury to the Christians. Among the Captives that he has carried off from Spain, there came one whom our Father gave us to teach us the Spanish Language; and as he had such an Affection for the Things of his own Country, he inspired us with the same Feeling, and with the earnest Desire of seeing and possessing that which he held in such high Estimation. With this Spanish Slave we made so quick a Progress in the Doctrine he taught us, that in a few Days we came to abhor that which we had imbibed with our Mother's Milk; while the Desire of Baptism was kindled in our Hearts. If I named Jesus, my Sister would name his Mother Mary; we had no other Way of communi-

cating on the Subject. We made a solemn Vow, to live and die in the Christian Religion. This Slave recommended us to seek some Means of being baptized. Eight years have now passed since he returned to his own Country; and at the Expiration of that Period, we heard that, on leaving Algiers, the Gallies of Genoa had captured him, and that they had put him to Death, under the Impression of his being our Father. Despairing now of hearing from, or seeing him, we resolved to seek our Remedy some other Way. About this Time my Sister being of an Age to marry, and I the Heir to my Father's Property, he agreed with a very rich Turk, who had a Son and Daughter of our Age, to make an Exchange, and marry Son with Daughter, and Daughter with Son. Such was also the general Wish of all Algiers. For although my Sister and I possessed Liberty and Riches, no one ever discovered in us any assumed Superiority on

this Account; and if we were highly esteemed, she for her great Beauty, and I as the Successor to so fine a Property, it never influenced us so far as to make us unmindful of the Christian Liberty that our Master had taught us. To shorten the History of our Misfortunes; finding that our Marriages were so soon to take place, which would have blotted out from our Souls the ardent Desire we preserved in our Breasts, my Sister and I agreed to wait till our Father should depart on a Voyage to the Levant, whither he was going in search of a Prize, wherewith to add to the Splendour of our Nuptials. As soon as his Galliot had put to Sea, we went to a Country House, and there entrusting our Secret to four Spanish Captives, two Turks, and six Italians, all well acquainted with the Coast of Spain, and my Mother feeling secure and easy in her Mind, because my Sister was under my Care, we took Possession of a Boat in the

Dusk of the Evening; and, in the most perfect Silence, and rowing with all our Might, made such good Speed, that at Day-break we discovered the Coast of Valencia: but while we were at the Height of our good Fortune, an East Wind overtook us, which made us lower our Sail, and drove us towards the West with so much Fury, that we had no longer Command of the Vessel; for such immense Mountains and Billows of Water raised themselves above us, that we saw ourselves a thousand Times on the point of being swallowed by the Waves. As I and my Servants had more Anxiety to save my Sister than ourselves; at one Period, when we observed a monstrous Sea coming apparently to swallow us up, while she lay extended on the Deck with her Face downward, four of them who placed themselves in Front, to guard her from the impending Danger, were washed away by the Wave, and never appeared more. We disposed our-

selves to submit to whatever Heaven should ordain, (after having fastened my Sister so securely, that the Sea could not carry her off,) in the Event of the Vessel being wrecked: while those who were employed in rowing, had the Oars wrested from their Grasp by the Violence of the Wind, leaving their Arms in a disabled State. Seeing that nothing less than God himself was able to assist us, I gave Orders that they should remain quiet, without attempting any Thing; for the Boat always floated on the Top of those mighty Waves, like a Nut-shell, though at last I perceived it ready to turn Keel uppermost. I embraced my Sister, whom I valued as my own Life; while the rest, who were not tied, were turned over by it, except two, who seized hold of the two Sides of the Boat. At length the Wind became somewhat more moderate; but the Waves, which had been set in Motion by the inexorable Fury of the Levant Wind, remained for two Days as

fierce as ever, while we continued five or six
 Hours without using our Rudder, or the
 Means of eating what little was left, as we
 had neither Oars nor any one to manage
 them. I recollected that our good Tutor, or
 Slave, had told us, that those who com-
 mended themselves to God, and received the
 holy Rite of Baptism, passed through their
 Troubles with much Patience and Hope;
 and we consoled ourselves with this Thought.
 My Sister having returned to herself, began
 to tell her Beads in all Sincerity, on the
 Rosary which Marcos de Obregon had left
 her, (for that was the Name of our Master)
 and just then we discovered your Vessel,
 without any Intention of defending ourselves:
 for those two Turks who were killed by
 your valorous Arm, were influenced by
 their Zeal to be baptized. Arrived at the
 Land of Christians, we prayed to God that
 he would endue us with Patience, and permit
 us to put our earnest Desires in Execution."

He now ended his Narrative, and his Sister her Weeping, in which she had indulged from the Moment he began to speak. The Captain, whose Tenderness and Compassion were greatly excited, said to them: “If that which you have related, prove correct, I will restore you to your Liberty, and return you all your Jewels.” He then added: “Would you know Marcos de Obregon if you saw him?” “How can we see him if he is dead?” replied the young Lady. The Captain then desired them to come out, and see whether any of the Men they saw there was he?—They were thrown into Confusion between their Hopes and Fears; and that of the Sister was particularly obvious, for Love brought past Scenes to her Memory, while her Sense of Religion increased the ardent Desire she felt to see *him* again, who had instructed her in it. They came forth; and, on seeing me, threw themselves at my Feet, calling me Father, Lord, and Master. I

remained for some Time in a State of Extasy, without being able to do any Thing else but wonder; declaring that all they had related was strictly true. On tranquilizing myself after this sudden Emotion, I wept tenderly with them; for Joy has its compassionate Tears, as well as grievous Afflictions. The Captain remained in Astonishment at the Adventure; and when they were somewhat consoled by his Words and my Presence, he said to them: “God forbid that I should make Captives of Christians. Your Liberty and your Jewels, of which I have been the Depository, not the Possessor, are from this Moment restored to you. There they are, (producing the Jewels, and among them the Rosary which I had given to the young Lady,) make use of your Christian Liberty, since you have ventured so much in the Execution of your meritorious Design.”

The Joy that I felt at again beholding

those two Pledges, which, in the midst of my miserable Captivity, had cheered and consoled me, now had the Effect, if I may so express myself, of restoring me to my former youthful State. For Life is upheld by the Joy of the Heart; and well-founded Joy begets Peace in the Soul. I conversed with them for a long Time on my past Troubles, and on Points which might tend to console them. For my Troubles now being over, Grief was not excited by recalling them to my Memory; since in proportion to the Extent of the past Evil, is the present Joy.

The virtuous young People were so much affected at seeing me, that their Faces were disfigured by the Tears they shed, on hearing me recount my Distresses. We gave them Directions for their Conduct;—assisting them to obtain, what they so earnestly wished; and the Change in their exterior Behaviour soon became so visible, that they afforded us all an Example of worthy Living.

They hastened to Valencia, in order to make themselves acquainted with their Father's Relations; and there they lived with so much Comfort of Soul, that I received Intelligence of their having ended their Days, furnishing bright Examples of Christian Virtue.

CHAP. XVII.

*The Squire's Bad Luck pursues, or rather keeps pace
with him.*

AS it appeared to me, that to enjoy the Quiet I desired, the Bustle of Malaga, and the Beauty of the Country and Sea, together with the kind Treatment of the Inhabitants, with many of whom I was acquainted, did not meet my Wishes, nor enable me to put in execution my principal Intention; I set out for the Saucedá of Ronda, where there are Places and Solitudes so remote, that a Man may live there many Years without being seen or discovered, if he does not wish it. A good Man directed me in my Road: but that I might not get over it without some Misfortune, on arriving at the Sabinilla, two Turkish Brigs pushed in, and their Crews leaped on Shore, carrying off all the Fisher-

men and Herdsmen that they found scattered about near the Beach. For though they had lighted their Beacons, we perceived nothing of them till we found ourselves in the Hands of the Turks, who handcuffed us, and carried us away to their Brigs. But finding themselves so completely Lords of the Land and the Sea, they became careless, drinking largely of some Wine that they found in a Fish-store; so that the whole, or the greater Part of them, became intoxicated. The People of Casares, Estepona, and the other Towns in the Neighbourhood, now coming down upon them by surprise, and finding them in this Condition, made Prisoners of some, and killed others; so that few escaped. We, who were handcuffed in the Brigs, told those who guarded us, that, if they wished to preserve their Lives, they must loose us, and put us on Shore;—which they shewed a Disposition to do; and it was well for them that they did; for one of

the Herdsmen, a Man of great Courage and Strength, having made use of his Teeth to loosen the Cords with which he was fastened, seized hold of an Oar, and tossing it about as if it had been a Measuring Yard, threatened to beat them with it, and soon made them untie us all. I grieved anew, bringing to my Recollection my past Troubles, by Land and Sea ;—which, though they have been very numerous, have always drawn forth the Pity and Compassion of others. And this proved to be the Case in the present Instance ;—for a Man, old in Years, but famed for his energetick Spirit, and his Deeds of Valour, an Inhabitant of the Town of Casares, who was compared to Abraham for Hospitality, (his House being a perfect Asylum for Strangers and Travellers), observing me, approached and said to me : “ Though my Compassion is ever apt to be excited on similar Occasions, there seems in the present Case, to be peculiar Reason for

it; as I perceive that you are old and afflicted. Come then with me to my House; for though my Means are but scanty, Goodwill abounds in my Dwelling: nor is there a Person under my Roof, who does not possess the same heart-felt Compassion as myself; not only my Wife and Children, but even my Servants and Slaves. For, in proportion as a Family is united in Love, Hospitality becomes valuable to those we entertain." "What is the Name of the Person," inquired I, "who treats me so compassionately?—For, independent of the Charity which shines resplendent in your Appearance, there is a superiour Force which excites an Affection for you in my Breast." "I am a Man, by no means distinguished for Talents, but contented with the State in which Providence has placed me," replied he. "I am poor, but well-intentioned; without Envy of the Good that befalls others, or of the Grandeur in general so much coveted.

I treat my Superiours with Simplicity and Humility; my Equals, as a Brother; and those who are under me, as a Father. When I find that my Herds are fruitful and multiply, I rejoice; I collect the Honey from my Hives, addressing myself familiarly to their industrious Inhabitants, as if they were capable of understanding me. I do not set myself up for a Judge of the Actions of others, because I am willing to think they do right; and if any Thing is said to the Disadvantage of a Person, I endeavour immediately to change the Subject, to one that will be agreeable to all Parties. I do all the Good in my Power with the little I have (which is more than I deserve). And in this Way I contrive to pass a quiet Time, free from Enmity, which is the Destroyer of Life.” “Happy you!” exclaimed I, “who, without courting the Poms and Vanities of the World, have obtained that which all are desirous to possess! How is it that you have

attained this State of Tranquillity?" He replied: "By not despising that which pertains to myself; by not envying the Acquirements of others; by not confiding in what admits of Doubt; by not seeking that which cannot be gained without Altercation." "He that has attained the Enjoyment of such a State as this, will do well to publish his Name," replied I. "My Name," said he, "is not of those which are known in the World; but in conformity to the Lowliness of my Condition, I am named Pedro Ximenes Espinel."* This Intelligence produced an Emotion in my Heart; but repressing my Feelings, I pursued the Conversation, with a View to afford myself Amusement during the Remainder of our Way to the Village. I therefore continued: "And in this peaceful Kind of Life, have you not occasionally some Cause of Grievs which disturb your Quiet?" "None, thank God!" replied he:

* The Family Name of the Author of this Work. Tr

“unless when my Land is not well ploughed, or my Dinner well cooked, I never experience Sorrow ; and even then by reading a Page or two in the Christian Life of Friar Luis of Granada, it soon vanishes.” “How many Philosophers,” rejoined I, “have endeavoured to possess this Simplicity of Feeling, and have not possessed it, with all their Observations on Human Life, and all their wise Precepts of Moral and Natural Philosophy !” “It does not astonish me,” said the good Man, “that, as a great deal of Knowledge is apt to produce a great deal of Presumption in the Minds of Men, those who are thus devoid of Humility, are unable to attain this happy State of Repose. But as you have wandered a good deal about the World, perhaps in your Travels you may have fallen in with a Nephew of mine ; for many Years have glided by without our hearing any certain Tidings of him, though we are told that he is now in Italy. And

although my principal Motive for entertaining so many Travellers at my House, is to do them a Kindness, I am also in part influenced by my anxious Desire to hear News of that Nephew.” “What is his Name?” inquired I. “The same as mine,” he replied. “Yes indeed, I know him, said I; “for he is the greatest Friend* I have in the World. He is alive and now in Spain, not far from hence; and you may see and converse with him, without difficulty.”

My Soul delighted in recognizing one of my own Kindred, and one so well founded in Moral and Christian Virtues. He rejoiced greatly at the Intelligence I gave him, though I did not make myself known to him until I had changed my Condition.† For, in truth, Flesh and Blood, especially when so

* The Author himself. *Tr.*

† This and the following Sentence probably allude to the Writer of this Work “changing his Condition,” by taking Orders. *Tr.*

nearly allied as this was, act as some Impediment to the Execution of good Intentions ; which rather require Solitude. We read of all the venerable, religious Characters, that they fled to Deserts, remote from the Society of Relatives and Friends who might prove an Obstacle in the Way of their laudable Undertakings. The Acts of the Mind are more free and unembarrassed in Solitude. Works of Genius do not require Society. Vice has least Force when its Opportunities are fewest. The most valuable Works of distinguished Men have been framed in Solitude ; and he who would wish to advance in Virtue, whether by the Practice, or by writing of it, will find himself better prepared, and more ready to perform these Acts in a State of Retirement. And though Solitude in itself is not good, so neither can it be said that *he* is a solitary Being, who has God for his Companion.

CHAP. XVIII.

The Squire falls into the Hands of Robbers.

TO shorten my Narrative, I arrived at the Saucedá, where the first Thing I encountered was three Herdsmen with Fowling-pieces. They cried out to me: "Be so good as to alight from that Mule." I answered them: "I find myself better, mounted than on Foot." "Very well," said they: since it appears you are pleased with the Animal, you may buy him of us." "In that Case," rejoined I, "I should remain without a Mule; and without Money, for I have none. But pray, Gentlemen, who may you be who wish to sell me a Mule which I purchased in Madrid?" "You shall know that by-and-by," said they; "but now be so good as to dismount." "Well, in good truth, I am very well pleased to get rid of

him," replied I; "for in my Life I never met with such another Brute. He is malicious, blind, and full of Spavins; carrying more Years upon his Shoulders than an old Palm-tree. He stumbles at every Turn, and rolls himself continually on the Ground without Leave or Licence. The only good Quality he possesses is, that if you set a Measure of Barley before him, he will never budge till he becomes thirsty." "Well, well," rejoined they; "in spite of all these Defects, we shall have no Objection to take him off your Hands."

At length I found myself constrained to dismount; and shewing them the Inside of my Pockets, which were empty, they swore that they would strip the Mule of his Skin, and wrap me up in it, if I did not immediately produce some Money for them. "What!" said I, "am I a Trunk, that you want to fur me over with the Mule's Skin? or do you wish to shelter me from the Cold

which my Fears at the Sight of your Arms have occasioned me?" From the Unconcern I manifested, they were induced to desist from their brutal Purpose. And they were further influenced by the Arrival, at this Moment, of five or six of their Gang, in close Pursuit of a Man, who defended himself most valiantly against them, inflicting and receiving many Wounds. The Chief of the Gang observing what passed, ordered his People not to kill so valiant a Man, who would prove a fit Companion for them. But the other, with a noble Fortitude, told them that he desired nothing more than that they should kill him if they could. "Why do you indulge such a Wish?" said the Chief; endeavouring to quiet his People, and tranquillize the Mind of the Stranger. "Because," replied he, "a Man cannot desire to live, who has experienced so great a Misfortune as that which has befallen me!" I observed the Man atten-

tively, and it appeared to me that it was Doctor Sagredo, in whose Service I had been at Madrid, though his Appearance was now very different. For when I knew him before, he was a Physician, and now he had the Appearance of a *broken Soldier*, but still retaining the Air of a Man of Valour; and, altogether, I was puzzled to decide whether he was my Friend or not. The Robbers became pacified, and the Doctor reproved with great Earnestness their Compassion, in not putting him to Death; and looking up to Heaven, he exclaimed, amid deep Sighs: “Oh! rigorous Fate! Oh! unutterable Griefs, which are felt by me alone! Oh! Change of Fortune; — Planets! Destroyers of my Peace and Happiness! For, after being delivered from such astonishing Perils, by Sea and in unknown Lands; when the Fury of the raging Ocean at length swallowed up my sweet Companion—my amiable Wife; who had followed and shared

with me such unheard-of Toils and Dangers! that I should be deemed so insignificant a Being, that the rising Waves would not overwhelm me, and allow me to accompany *her* in her Death, who had proved so faithful a Partner to me through Life!" He made use of so many piteous Expressions, as even to draw forth the compassionate Feelings of that vile Herd. There were about three hundred of these Robbers about the World at that Period, who in the Dress of Herdsmen wandered up and down the Country, robbing such as made no Resistance, and murdering those who defended themselves. About one hundred of them, who were collected together in this Place with their Chief, now held a Council, on a certain Suspicion they entertained that the King was taking Measures to suppress the Flame they had kindled, and to put a Stop to the exorbitant Mischiefs they were every Moment committing throughout Andalusia; and

at the same time to decide what they should do with several Individuals whom they had detained as Prisoners in their Caves.

During this Consultation, they put Doctor Sagredo, myself, and two others into a Cave, which it was very easy to enter, but impossible to escape from ; though we found in it a sufficiency of Light, that came in through the Trees overhanging the Entrance. Being desirous to break the mournful Silence which this dismal Situation occasioned, I thus addressed my Companion : “ As we are now in the same doleful Plight, and suffering from the same unhappy Cause ; tell me, I intreat you, if you are Doctor Sagredo ? ” He started and exclaimed : “ Who then are you that ask the Question, and where have you known me ? ” “ I am,” replied I, “ Marcos de Obregon.” Before I could well pronounce these Words, he threw his Arms round my Neck, and exclaimed : “ Oh ! Father of my Heart, already has your

dear precious Friend paid the Debt of Nature! Already has Death embraced my beloved Spouse! Doña Mergelina de Aybar is dead; and with her, died all my Happiness, all my Society! No longer can I call myself Doctor Sagredo, but the Shade of him that bore that Name; until the Dissolution of this wretched Body shall take place. Ah! my faithful Counsellor; how badly have I profited by your Advice; or I should not have found myself in this State of Solitude, which afflicts my Soul. But perhaps the great God, after so many Miseries, may have been pleased to throw me into this Dungeon, in order that your Society may afford me Comfort and Consolation in the Hour of Death. For when I lost *her*, I was separated from all the Good that this World contained for me." "But, pray," exclaimed I, "tell me how, when, and where, did you lose that beloved Treasure of yours; she who was the Admiration of the whole

World for her Beauty?" "Nothing," replied he, "but your Solicitations could have prevailed on me to recount Misfortunes, the Remembrance of which proves so burthensome to me. But as we do not know what may be the End of this cruel Captivity, it may perhaps be some Alleviation of my bitter Cares, to renew my Grievs by recounting them to one who will sympathize with me, and not make a Jest of them. I will therefore relate from the Commencement, that History which has terminated in my total Ruin.

CHAP. XIX.

Dr. Sagredo relates his wonderful Adventures.

“WHEN (for my Misfortune) I departed from Madrid, that Queen of the World, or Mother of the Universe, in the very first Town I entered, I heard the Drums beating up for Volunteers, for an Expedition, by order of Philip the Second, to discover the Straits of Magellan ; and as I was born with a greater Inclination to Arms than to Books, I united myself to their Party ; and, with this Object in view, attached myself to a Captain, who was a Friend of mine, laying out my little Stock of Wealth in Arms, and the necessary Equipment of a Soldier ; and finding that Doña Mergelina was not dissatisfied with these Arrangements, I felt more inclined to follow that Mode of Life, as I should have the Pleasure of her

Society; for several other married Men were to take their Wives with them in that Voyage, it being the Intention of his Majesty to people that Part of the Country with his own Subjects. But would to God that *he* had prevented the Execution of this my Design; for my Will was naturally inclined so to yield to his, that without his Consent, I should not thus have cast myself heedlessly on a Profession so full of Miseries and Necessity. To shorten my Tale, we embarked at San Lucar, and arrived at the Gulf of Yeguas, where the Tempest we encountered was so outrageous and terrible, that, if we had been much longer exposed to it, not a single Plank would have remained on which to save ourselves. But the Prudence of Don Diego Flores de Valdes, General of the Squadron, by forbearing to brave the Tempest, and returning to winter at Cadiz, saved us. From thence we departed a second Time; and, after a Variety

of Mischances, reached the Coast of Brazil, passing our second Winter at Saint Sebastian's, at the Mouth of the Rio Janeiro, a wide, extensive Harbour. We remained there for some Length of Time, astonished at beholding the Multitude of naked Indians; sufficient in number to people the New World. Some of these Indians disappeared occasionally, without any one knowing what had become of them; and a young and valiant Portuguese Mestizo, eager to discover what had been the Fate of these Persons, armed himself with a small round Shield, with a sharp Point in the Centre, and a good Sword; proceeding to the Beach, where he espied a Sea Monster at a Distance, waiting to seize on any Straggler he might discover. When the Youth first observed him, he was on his Knees;* but he presently raised himself up, and stood erect, and then

* It does not appear how all this Information was gained. *Tr.*

the young Man found, that the Monster was double his own Height. He approached the Portuguese ; and, closing with him, thought to have carried him off into the Ocean, as he had done the others. But the valiant Youth, placing his Shield before him, defended himself with his Sword in the best Way he could ; though the Scales of the Beast were so hard, that he could not contrive to wound him in any Part of his Body ; while the Blows he received from the Monster were so overpowering, that he did not dare to await them ; but, by means of the steel Point in his Shield, he cut him so severely in the Joints of his Arms, (in which Part the Beast was most vulnerable) that the Blood began to flow from his Wounds ; and after the Battle had continued a long Time, they both fell dead together. On going afterwards to look for the young Man, they discovered one of the Combatants stretched out lifeless in one Part, and the other in another

The Captain, Juan Gutierrez de Sama, and I, with many other Spaniards, beheld this formidable Monster, with much Astonishment. There are many Shoals and Islands in those Seas; and on one of them, we saw one of those Serpents, (described in this Country for the sake of terrifying us) the Snout of which was like that of a Greyhound, very long, and the Mouth filled with the sharpest Teeth.* He had large Wings of Flesh, resembling those of a Bat, the Body and Breast of great Dimensions, and the Tail was like a small Beam, curled round. He had two Feet, or Hands with Nails, and altogether his Appearance was most terrifick. We presented our Fowling-pieces at him, because he was in a flowing Stream, whither we were accustomed to go for Water. I was of opinion, that, on attempting to destroy him, he might serve some of us in the

* Apparently an Alligator. *Tr.*

same Way; and therefore we left him alone; and, as soon as he observed us, he made off into the thick Part of the Wood, leaving behind him, a broad Track, like that which would be produced by dragging a Beam along the Ground. But as it does not concern me, or my Story, I shall omit mentioning the many other great Curiosities we beheld in this Country. From thence we pursued our Voyage on to the Straits, in the Months of January and February, at which Period the Summer there commences; being continually opposed by contrary Winds and strong Currents, influenced either by the lofty Mountains, and deep Channels below the Water, or excited by the furious Winds; and these presented such decided Obstacles to our Progress, that many of the Ships experienced great Injury from the Tempest, and some were wrecked, without the others being able to assist them. Amongst those which went down, was that in which I

and my Wife were embarked ; for though we fired Guns as Signals of Distress, they either did not hear, or could not relieve us, except one Vessel, which was within Sight. And the Seamen, (contrary to their Custom) taking Pity on us, hastened to our Assistance in such good Time, that they managed to save our Clothes and Persons, before the whole went to the Bottom. As soon as our Ship had foundered, and the Soldiers and Mariners had got on board the other, they hastened to afford what Consolation they could to my Spouse ; who, though a Woman of muscular Intrepidity, had been somewhat alarmed by the near Approach of all-devouring Death. It was the general Opinion, that we ought not to follow the rest of the Fleet until the Crew had recovered from their past Fatigues. We soon discovered an uninhabited Island, which we reached with some Difficulty. Here we recruited our Strength, and took in Water, which proved very good ; and we met

with some small Fruits, with which we refreshed ourselves ; and at the End of a Fortnight, making Sail again, we attempted to come up with the rest of the Fleet, but did not succeed. At length, we got within Sight of the Straits, after having been long out of our Reckoning. We beheld great and lofty Mountains, covered with Wood and Fruit-trees ; and according to the Accounts which we received from some of the Settlers, who had been left by the Fleet, there was no Want of Game. But the Captain of our Ship would not permit us to go on Shore, as he wished to overtake the Fleet.

CHAP. XX.

The Doctor continues his Narrative.

“ **WHILE** we were waiting in hopes of a Change of Wind, we beheld a very considerable Number of Birds approach that Part of the Straits, which was peopled by a Race so diminutive, (though in other Parts, they are extremely tall and muscular) that the Birds might almost be considered Lords of the Land; so much so, that the little Men were accustomed to run away from them. At length we got so strong a Wind, that it drove us through the Straits, without our being able to resist it; but with great Injury to the Vessel; for the Coast being full of Shoals, we went dragging our Anchors along through the Sand. Neither was the Strait open, like that of Gibraltar, but abounding in Rocks, Shoals, and Inequali-

ties, so that we were constantly running foul of the Anchors which the Ships of the Fleet had left behind them. So great was the Rapidity with which the Wind drove us, that the Sailors had not Time to provide Means for the Safety of the Ship. In spite of all these Dangers, and the many hard Thumps the Vessel received from the Sandbanks, we contrived to pass through the Straits; though the Violence of the Wind lasted so long, that our principal Sails were all torn; and although the rest were all lowered, the Sprit-sails were left standing, so that the overpowering Fury of the Wind carried us wherever it pleased, without our being able to guide the Vessel, or to discover a Place to which we might repair for Safety. In short, we wandered about in this helpless State for six Months, every Necessary for the Preservation of Human Life having failed us; tossed about and driven by those imperious Waves and tremendous Seas, nei-

ther known to, nor navigated by any Human Being; having lost all Hopes and all Control over the Vessel, without knowing at all whither we were directing our Course, and making up our Minds every Day to become the Food of formidable Monsters, out of our own Element. We had now consumed our entire Stock of Provisions; so much so, that an old leather Cover of a Portmanteau would have been considered a most delicious Repast by its Master (if he had been permitted to devour it in peace): and as we were constantly exposed to the Dread of the Sepulchre, which always stood ready open to our View, in the dismal Caverns of the restless Ocean, or in the more hungry Bowels of its untameable Inhabitants, we were now almost impressed with the Conviction, that the whole World was a second Time overflowed with Water, as at the Universal Deluge; when they all began to exclaim with one Voice, “ Land! Land!

Land!" For we discovered an Island, surrounded by such high Rocks, and these covered with Trees, that it appeared like an enchanted Spot. But we had scarcely discovered it, when all at once it vanished from our Sight; not by the Influence of Magick, but by the Force of a Current, which carried away the Vessel with great Violence, against our Inclination, till at length this same Current drove us on one Side, among some Eddies, which were so furious, that we were convinced we should all be swallowed up by them. But the Mariners having recovered from their Alarm, and keeping the Direction in which they had seen the Island, it appeared to them, that by making sail with the Foresail, and keeping the Current always in View, we might again fall in with the Island. However, it was my Opinion, that they should lower the Foresail, and tow the Ship, by means of the two Boats which were made fast to the Stern. For

if the Violence of the Current should carry away one of the Boats, it would be easy to return to the Ship; but if it should carry the Ship itself away, we should probably fail altogether in our Attempt to save ourselves. We all therefore commended ourselves to the blessed Guardian Angel, in the most earnest Prayers and Entreaties; and those who, in spite of our Want of Food, continued the most robust, or rather the least weak, placed themselves at the Oar, changing Places from time to time, that every one might be enlivened in turn with the Prospect of seeing Land. We had a Man well lashed in the Main-top-mast-head, to look out constantly, and give us immediate Notice of any Thing he should discover. At the End of two Days, at the Point where it seemed we had lost the Prospect of Safety, we again beheld those lofty, craggy Rocks, higher than that of Gibraltar, but full of such beautiful and pic-

turesque Scenery, that my Companions were quite enchanted with it; so that it became necessary to take the Oars out of their Hands, lest in their Anxiety and ardent Desire to reach the Shore, they should lead the Vessel again into the Current, and ourselves into the last Stage of Misery and Desperation. But I cried to them eagerly, in a loud Voice: ‘Now, my Companions, that God is pleased to offer us an Asylum which our Exertions will enable us to reach, after all our Misfortunes, Deprivations, and Labours, it would shew great Want of Wisdom and Perseverance, nor would it be *his* Fault, but ours, were we to precipitate ourselves into so evident a Danger, as that which we have touched with our Hands, and seen with our Eyes.’ Conforming, therefore, to my Advice, in an Affair which concerned us all so deeply, we continued to approach the Island with great Caution; and although we could not avoid getting the

Boat a little into the Current, the Mariners paid so much Attention, and acted with so much Judgment, that the Injury she sustained, was easily repaired. We pushed on so far, and so carefully, that we soon arrived within half a League of the Island, and close to the Current, which, in the Opinion of the most experienced amongst us, began at a very short Distance from the Island, and extended itself in such a Manner on both Sides, that it left the Entrance inaccessible. We therefore gave it the Name of “the inaccessible Island.” And though the Current was not so wide in this Part, as in that which, for our Misfortune, we had fallen in with before; it was, however, more furious, from being more confined. At length, when we found ourselves undecided what Course to take, and no one offered any Advice, I exclaimed boldly: ‘Yonder is Land, and Rocks! why should we not find them here too?’ Having said this, I insisted on their

letting fall the Anchor; and as we found Bottom at a small Depth, they were elated with the Hopes of saving themselves. I then called for all the spare Cables and Ropes; of which, and of Gunpowder, we had Abundance; and having tied a sufficient Number of the Ropes together, to enable the Boat to reach the Shore with one End, while the other should remain fastened to the Vessel; and having instructed those who remained on Board, to continue serving out the Cable to us, as they found we had need of it, I selected fifty of the stoutest Fellows we had, and arming them with Muskets, and a good Stock of Powder, we betook ourselves to the Boats, and guided by our good Angel, without any Injury, arrived shortly in a Bay of the Island, as snug and sheltered, as the Current had been dangerous and violent.* Having met with such happy

* It may seem doubtful, whether it be worth while to retain the following History, in the Translation; as it

and unexpected Success in our first Attempt, we continued rowing under the Shelter of the lofty Rocks, in the Hope of finding an Entrance; and we espied presently, at the Point which was formed by one Side of the curved Bay, an Idol of the most formidable Magnitude, and wonderful Form, and altogether of an Appearance so novel, that one could not have imagined any Thing like it. For the Dimensions of its Body were equal to that of an ordinary-sized Tower, and it was supported by two Feet, large in proportion to the Body. He had only one Arm, which proceeded from both the Shoul-

accords so little with the Style of the Work, in which we do not find any other such gross Improbabilities. It serves, however, as a Picture of the Times, when Stories of the wildest Kind were credited by the most respectable People, when related, as having happened in the newly-discovered Regions of America. This account of Giants on the Coast of Patagonia, is exactly conformable to the first Descriptions made of that Country, which up to the present Day, is supposed to be Inhabited by a large race of Men. *Tr.*

ders, and was so long that it extended some Way below the Knees. In his Hand he held a Sun, or rather Rays of a Sun. The Head was in proportion to the Remainder of the Figure, but with only one Eye, from the lower Lid of which issued the Nose, having but one Nostril; he had only one Ear, and that placed in the Nape of the Neck. His Mouth was open, and contained two very sharp Teeth, which gave him a menacing Appearance; a projecting Chin covered with thick Bristles, and a small Portion of wild dishevelled Hair. Though this terrifick Object might be sufficient to prevent our advancing further, still as we were in search of Life, which we must find in this Island, or not at all; we continued our Course towards the Idol, as the narrow Entrance (hitherto unseen and unvisited) was situated in that Direction. Having arrived at this Point, two tremendous Giants of the same Form as I have described that

of the Idol to be, rushed out, and seized the Boat, one on one Side, and one on the other. Our Alarm and their Violence were so great, that, without our attempting to make the least Resistance, they cast us into a Cave, at the Foot of the Idol; except one of our Party, who, having the Boldness to discharge his Piece, one of the Giants took hold of him by the Waist, and threw him with such Violence, that we saw him fall into the Sea at a great Distance. I had taken the Precaution to fasten the Boat to the Trunk of a Tree, which we found near the Entrance; and which afterwards proved of great Importance to us. Not that I had foreseen the Mischief that was to happen to us; but I did it to prevent the Boat from being carried away by the Current.

CHAP. XXI.

The Doctor's Narrative continued.

“AS soon as the Giants had thrown us into the Cave, they stopped up the Mouth of it by letting fall the Trunk of a Tree, which was suspended above in the Manner of a Draw-bridge. The tremendous Force with which it fell, not only made the Idol and the whole Cave tremble, but the Agitation it occasioned in the Air, produced a like Commotion in the Sea, and some great Waves were dashed up with Violence through a Window or Chink which opened towards the Sea, and we heard our Boat strike repeatedly against the Bank; for I really believe I do not deceive myself, when I say that the Trunk measured twenty-five Yards in Circumference, and above fifty-five Yards in Height, and the Wood of which it was

formed was as massive and weighty as the hardest Stone. The Giants having rendered so great a Service to their Idol, began to dance and make merry, producing most unmusical Noises from some harsh dismal Tabors, which appeared more like the hollow Sound in a vaulted Building, than a cheerful Air to dance to. While they were thus occupied with their Pastimes, and entertaining themselves at the projected Expence of our Lives, we were employed in bewailing our Misfortunes, and the Cruelty of Fate; which had treated us so unmercifully, after conducting us to a Point where we hoped to find Alleviation to our continued Troubles, leaving us to die of Hunger and Thirst amongst the dead Bodies of those whom they had sacrificed to their insatiable Idol. But one ought never to lose one's Courage, under the greatest Adversities;—and, as Distresses are the Touchstone of Valour and Ingenuity, I presently thought of a Method

by which to extricate ourselves from that unfortunate Situation, in which Courage, Ingenuity, and Activity, must necessarily concur.

“ Seeing that they were intent on the Diversions of their Festivity, and were, in truth, a simple Sort of People, I thought it probable that considering us in a State of Security, they would be off their Guard; which would enable us, though not without some Trouble, to put in Execution the Design I had formed; which was this: I took as many Cords as were necessary, and selecting from the dead Men’s Bones, those that were the smallest, and the most free from Flesb, made a Ladder, by Means of which we could reach the Chink mentioned above, though we could not manage this without difficulty; for as it all consisted of hard Rock, there was no Possibility of making Holes in it, by which to ascend and fasten the Ladder at the Top. But as Ne-

cessity is so great a Contriver, and nothing less than the Preservation of Life was now concerned, I took a Spine Bone, and putting a Cord through the Hole in it, and uniting it strongly with the two Ropes that remained below, we all tried to throw it into the Cleft in the Rock ; and a robust Youth, bred in the Mountains of Ronda, managed it so dexterously, that the Bone remained fixed in the Cleft, and we then easily contrived to raise up one End of the Ladder and make it fast. This being effected, I mounted the Steps with great Caution, and made it so secure, that all my Companions ascended, and got down to the Boat on the other Side, without further Difficulty. This ingenious Contrivance having succeeded, I collected together all the Powder from the several Flasks, and while my Companions were mounting the Ladder, and descending to the Boat, I formed a Mine below the Feet of the Idol, as there were many Cavities for the

Reception of the Powder; and leaving it well closed in, with five or six Inches of lighted Cord, I mounted the Ladder, and jumping into the Boat, made them row away quickly to a Part where the Explosion could not affect us. We had hardly placed ourselves in a State of Security, when the Mine exploded with a tremendous Sound, which agitated the Sea, and was felt all over the Island. The Idol fell with a horrid Crash on the Dancers, destroying a Dozen and a half of them. The Remainder, seeing that *he* in whom they had so long confided, had murdered their Companions, took to their Heels and ran up the Country, leaving the Coast quite clear. On which we immediately went on Shore, leaving the Boat well secured; and all, with one Accord, threw ourselves prostrate on the Ground, and kissed it, giving hearty Thanks to the great Creator of Heaven and Earth, for permitting us to set Foot again on our own Element.

And though we were struck with the Mischief which the demolished Idol had caused, and the Spectacle that we had before our Eyes was sufficient to restrain us, beholding the Earth covered with the Bodies of those enormous Monsters ;—however, as the Spot was now cleared of those who could do us any further Mischief, and we found wherewithal to appease our Hunger and Thirst, we lost no Time, but fell to devouring some excellent Fruit that we found growing on the Trees near the Cave, and drinking some delicious Water at a cheerful Spring that rose at the Foot of a Cliff hard by. I said all I could to dissuade my Companions from gorging themselves with too much Fruit, lest while we were in Pursuit of Life, we should find ourselves in the Road to Death. Then looking about us on all Sides, we observed that one of those Giants on whom the Idol had fallen, was still alive, though terribly crushed, and his

Legs broken so effectually that he could not move; and making Signs to him that he should point out to us where the Provisions were to be found, he made a Motion with his Nose, (not being able to do it in any other Way,) towards a Cavern, the Entrance to which was covered completely with green Trees, so thickly interwoven, that it was difficult for the *Natives* to get in, though not so much so for us. And we learnt afterwards that no one was permitted to enter, unless they were employed in taking out Provisions for the publick Use, under the Penalty of not eating any Part of them for a certain Period. At length we entered the Cave, which was very spacious and light within, being divided into several Apartments. We found there, excellent dried Fish and Meat, and some hung Beef very well cured, and a Sort of Fruit larger and more savoury than Hazel Nuts, which they make use of instead of Bread. With these,

and many other Sorts of Food, we loaded our Boat, and filling a dozen Skins with nice cool Water, we sent it off to our Companions, who, by this Time, had begun to give us over for lost. They were all delighted at the Sight of this seasonable Supply, and immediately began to eat and drink in good earnest. Then desiring that a Guard should be left in the Ship for the Protection of the Wives and of those Men who were already on Shore, the Remainder worked their Way to the Island in the two Boats, by means of the Ropes and Cables, without which they could not have effected it;—and, with their Bellies well filled with Provender, and their Flasks with Powder, they contrived to unite themselves to our Party.”

CHAP. XXII.

How the Doctor was interrupted—He proceeds in his Story.

THE Narrative of Doctor Sagredo was interrupted by some Portuguese who had arrived from La Vendeja, with four Loads of Linen; and the Path they had taken being quite a new one, they had hoped to elude the Vigilance of the Robbers. But these were better acquainted with it than the Portuguese, and therefore encountered them near the Mouth of our Cave. The Portuguese were so alarmed at this unexpected Meeting, that throwing themselves on their Knees, they exclaimed: "By the blessed Wounds of Christ, pray do not kill us like Rabbits, nor take Vengeance on us for our Sins, though we are no Castilians!" "Don't be alarmed, you Blockheads," ex-

claimed the Chief; "all we require is, that you will sell us your Linen at Prime Cost." "With all our Hearts," replied they; and taking out their Cash Book, in which the Prices were marked, every Robber asked for that which he had need of, and the Leader of the Gang insisted that each should put down his Money, before he took the Linen; and it astonished me to observe that they treated the Portuguese so compassionately. They received their Money, and having unpacked their Linen, and taken out the Yard to measure it with, the Chief said to them: "As this is a free Republick, we employ our own Weights and Measures; not making use of Yards to measure by, as in other Parts of Spain." He then called for a Pole (which was about twenty Spans in Length), for the Purpose of measuring the Linen, directing that the Number of Yards each had paid for should be delivered over to him, after it had been measured by

the Pole instead of a common Yard. This Arrangement afforded high Satisfaction to the Purchasers; but the poor Portuguese were forced to submit in Silence; taking their Departure, however, disencumbered of the heavy Load they had brought with them. We all laughed heartily at this Incident, except poor Doctor Sagredo; who continued his Narrative in these Words:

“ Before our Fortune took an unfavourable Turn, we managed Matters so well, as to leave the Cavern nearly emptied of all the Provisions it had contained, having filled our Vessel, not only with fresh and dried Fruits, but with Abundance of salt Fish and Meat; and a great many Skins of Water and of other Liquors of very agreeable Flavour and substantial Quality, which those Giants were in the habit of drinking. But secure as we imagined our Situation, it did not prevent the Giants at last from taking us by surprise. For, finding that we had

undisturbed Possession of that Part of the Country ; and our Fatigues and Dangers at Sea requiring some Repose on Shore, we were in the habit of repairing to sleep in the Cave, whose cool Retirement we enjoyed greatly. The Quiet of the spacious Halls, in which there was Abundance of good Food, and some delicious little Fountains of ice-cold Water, proved so grateful and refreshing after our Fatigues, that we might have been tempted to take up our constant Abode there. We continued for two Days to enjoy ourselves in this Retreat ; but on the third, while we were taking our Siesta as usual in the Cave, we were awakened by a great Clamour of Voices, and a confused Noise of Drums. Every one exclaimed, “To Arms ! to Arms !” For we found that all the Giants of the Island were coming down upon us ; and running for our Muskets, we found that there was no Match lighted, nor any Fire with which to light one, and that

nobody had recollected to bring from the Ship, Flint, Steel, or Tinder. Upon which they began crying out: ‘ We are lost!’ But, lest Fear should take complete Possession of their Hearts, from thinking it impossible to defend themselves in so confined a Situation, I directed the major Part of my Companions to tear down the wooden Partitions which divided the several Apartments, and to form, with their Assistance, a Sort of Trap into which the Giants might fall, after overcoming the Obstacles which the Trees at the Entrance presented. For, as I have mentioned above, the Entrance of the Cave was very difficult of Access for the Giants. The rest of us provided ourselves with two dry Sticks each, some of Mulberry Tree, some of Ivy, and others of Cane, and rubbing them briskly together, in a short Time they yielded Smoke, and then a Flame, with which we kindled our Matches. We had abundance of Time for all this; for

the Giants did not come down with an Intention of attacking us, (considering us already dead,) but to examine what Mischief had been caused by the Overthrowing of the Idol; those who had escaped having fled to their Governor with the News. This Chief, whom they called Hazmur, was now brought down in great State, seated in a Chair made of Osiers, formed like a Basket, and borne on four large Beams, to witness the ruined Remains of the Idol whom they all adored, and the Corpses of those who had been destroyed by its Fall. They would have remained ignorant of our being within the Cave, if their broken-backed Companion (who was still alive) had not informed them of it. As soon as they were made acquainted with this Circumstance, they ran furiously towards the Mouth of the Cave, throwing huge Stones into it, tearing off Branches and rooting up the Trees which impeded their free Entrance. But the first

of them that reached it, either stumbled and fell into the Trap, or else fell from the Effect of our firing. The general Opinion was, that as they had each but one Eye, we should take Aim at that Part; for, having lost it, they would not be able to find their Way into the Cave: mine however was, that it would be best, having loaded every Piece with two Balls, to direct our Aim towards their Legs, as a better Mark than the single Eye. In consequence of the Adoption of this Plan, all fell that approached the Cave, assisted as we were by the Wood we had placed there, and the thick-growing Trees, that formed an Entrenchment and Loop-holes for our Fire. And though the large Stones and Fragments of Rock which they threw, might have caused serious Mischief to us, the Trees so broke their Violence, that when they reached the Mouth of the Cave, their Force had greatly spent itself, and the Injury

they occasioned scarcely amounted to any Thing. On the other hand, they found themselves so roughly handled, that the Governor, astonished at so extraordinary an Occurrence, gave Orders that they should desist from offensive Operations. For, as the Idol had fallen in so wonderful a Manner, and those whom they had considered dead had found means to inflict Wounds on the living, it seemed evident to him that some superiour Power must have acted by our Means. They obeyed him instantly, being thus rendered peaceable by the Fall of some of their Companions, without having done us the least Injury. They then made Signs to us of Peace and Amity: and the Governor, looking up to Heaven and raising up his Hand in the same Direction, thereby assured us that we might shew ourselves securely and freely, and inform him who and what we were, (without Alarm), and our Motive for appearing in his Country. Nothing, in

fact, could have happened more opportunely for us; for in a very short Time our Ammunition would have been consumed. We therefore sallied out of the Cave with the best Will imaginable, forming ourselves in three Ranks, and causing our Drums to beat with much Effect and Solemnity. So great was the Satisfaction of that simple People, (at least, of those among them who had escaped unwounded,) at hearing the well-ordered Sound of the Drums, that their massive Arms fell from their Hands, while they directed their Attention towards their Chief, who still remained seated in his Chair, supported on the Shoulders of those who had borne him thither. He himself appeared quite astounded and amazed, at beholding so small a Race of People provided with two Arms and two Legs, and every other Part corresponding in the same Way; but still more was he astonished at our animated and skilful Mode of pro-

ceeding. We, on our parts, halted at the Mouth of the Cave, to make our Observations on that wonderful People, covered with Skins of Animals and with Feathers of various Colours, and on the Solemnity of their Governor's Demeanour, who appeared to be respected, feared, and obeyed in all his Commands. After some Consideration, we arranged certain Signs by which to express our Sentiments, making use of such as were most natural and bore the greatest Resemblance to Truth. To avoid Prolixity, I shall not enter into any particular Explanation of them, but state merely the Conversation, which we were enabled, by their Means, to carry on.

“ The Governor began by asking us the three following Questions : First, ‘Whether we were the Sons of the Ocean?’ Secondly, ‘If we were, how it happened that our Size was so diminutive?’ ‘And,’ thirdly, ‘being diminutive, how we had ventured to shew

ourselves amongst a gigantick Race like them?’ To the first Question, we replied: ‘That we were not Sons of the Ocean, but of the true God, who was so infinitely superiour to the Deity they worshipped, that he had now chastised them, for endeavouring to slay his Children; who had taken Refuge in the Island, whither we had been driven by the Fury of the Tempest.’ As to the other Points, we told them, that Greatness does not consist in the Bulk of the Corporeal Frame, but in Worth and Valour of the Mind, and that the Possession of these Qualities had emboldened us to enter their Territories, and to conquer the Violence of the turbulent Ocean. And, that the Children of God, the great Founder of Heaven and Earth, scorned to fear any Dangers that could happen to them from the Hands of Men, especially of such as failed to adore *Him*, who was the Universal Lord of all celestial and terrestrial Dignities,

and the Creator of that very Sun which they worshipped. When the Governor heard us assert that the Sun had a Superiour, he changed the Conversation, asking us : ‘ What had been the Object of our Visit ? ’ In reply, we told him the true State of the Case ; relating some Particulars of our Adventures, and reminding him of the Obligation which all Creatures are under (as the Sons of God) to succour and assist each other in their Misfortunes and Necessities. And that we requested this Assistance at his Hands, as a Man who had been placed by God in an exalted Station, in which it became him to award Recompence or Punishment as the Case might deserve.—He shewed Signs of Astonishment at our Reply ; and then he explained to us, that he was well satisfied with what we had told him ; but that it was out of his Power, without first reporting so extraordinary an Event to the King of the Island, to receive and

shelter us; for that, if he did, his Life would be the Forfeit. We then entreated his Permission for four of our Companions to go on Board the Vessel in search of Food ; for we knew that he would not let us all go, neither did we choose all to leave the Mouth of the Cave. They immediately got into the Boat, making Signs to them on board the Ship to drag them along-side by means of the Cables. In the mean Time the Governor dispatched a Courier to the King of the Island, to inform him of what was going on. The Messenger employed by him was a Dog ; for they are accustomed to make use of these Animals in this Way on important Occasions, putting cross-wise in their Mouth a Joint of a Cane, in the Hollow of which is placed the Intelligence they wish to send, written in Cypher on the broad Leaves of a Tree, well folded up. They then put a well-fastened Muzzle on him, to prevent the Cane from falling, and also to discourage

him from stopping by the Way to eat or drink ; so that his Mouth remains only sufficiently open to breathe ; and as soon as this is all arranged, they gave him four Blows with a Stick, to induce him to make more Speed to the appointed Stage, which is about four Leagues distant. When he reaches it, the People come out to receive him, caressing him and giving him Food. They then immediately dispatch a fresh Dog in the same Way ; by which Means they are enabled to send a hundred Leagues in one Day. But they make a Point of sacrificing to the Idol, every one who causes any of the Dogs to go out of his Way, or who prevents him from arriving at his regular Post, or Resting-place, where there are always Dogs ready from the nearest Inns ; whom they treated ill, that they may be encouraged to hasten with greater Diligence from one Resting-place to another. While my Companions were gone to the Vessel,

the Governor ordered that they should not be permitted to enter the Cave at their Return, until he had seen what they had brought back with them, and that we should not be allowed to go out of the Cave, on pain of Death to him who should attempt it. Our only Remedy, therefore, was in the Arrival of our Companions; for they had been for Powder and Ball, of which we had very little remaining. But the Governor secured them, by directing that six Centinels should remain constantly at the Mouth of the Cave during the Night;—for by Day they were so near, that all could keep Watch. It was necessary for us, when our Companions arrived, to desire them to go back, and remain in the Boat till we should make a Signal to them to land again. And reflecting in what Manner we should get rid of our Night Guard, I told them likewise, that on their hearing any Noise or Movement in the Cave, they should imme-

diately enter it as expeditiously as possible. With this View, when the Night Guard had left their Post in the Morning, and the People were inattentive, I scattered some Gunpowder mixed up with small Pebbles on the Ground where they were accustomed to sit, laying from thence to our Station a Train of the same Powder. When Night came, the six Sentries took their Post again, and some of them being scated, and others stretched out on the Ground without Clothes, (which they do not wear,) we set fire to the Train, and the Powder blowing up, they were so scorched as not to be able to sit down again for several Days. These, and the rest of their simple Brethren, were convinced that the Fire proceeded out of the Ground; and ran away, full of Fear and Astonishment, to relate the Circumstance to their Governour. While they were absent, we contrived to get our four Messengers, and two others who accompanied them, into the

Cave ; and as they brought with them six bags of Powder and Ball, we rejoiced greatly at their Arrival, and immediately put ourselves in a State of Defence for any Thing that might happen. We passed the Night with great Vigilance, planting Sentries, and entrenching ourselves anew by means of the Timber ; but as they were not aware that the Mischief had been occasioned by us, they took no Steps against us. In the Morning, at the first Appearance of the Sun, they all directed their Attention towards him, saluting him with a Concert of Howls, accompanied with Canes, using but few Words, and repeating them very often.

CHAP. XXIII.

Conclusion of Dr. Sagredo's Narrative.

“THE Dog-Courier returned, with the Cane in his Mouth, containing Instructions, written in Hieroglyphicks, not to permit us to remain in the Island: ‘For that People, who had all their Members double, were likely to possess a Spirit of Double-dealing; and as to the Preservation of Peace, which they had always professed, they would not be able to continue it if Foreigners were allowed to come and take Possession of their Territory in this Way. For, that if there should be any Disturbance in the Country, the Mischief would be greatly increased, by those being at Hand, who would be apt to assist and foment it:—That there would be a much better Chance of preserving Peace, if the Turbulent should have none to favour

and encourage them; for that when Inferiors have once lost a proper Sense of Submission to their Superiors, there is no Possibility of maintaining Peace; and if the Disturbers of the Publick Quiet meet with no one to unite with them, they remain in a State of Tranquillity and Repose:—That Animals of one and the same Species are wont to preserve Peace with one another; but if they are of a *different Species*, they are never in a State of Amity: and thus should we act towards them:—That it was not fitting, that what they had preserved for their own Use hitherto, without Intercourse with any Foreign Power, should now be enjoyed by a Set of Strangers:—That it was not possible to preserve Peace and Friendship with People of Customs so opposite to their own: And that, as it was necessary to administer Justice with Impartiality, if we should be favoured equally with the Natives, great Enmity would be created

to the Disturbance of the Publick Repose. On the whole, therefore, he gave Orders that we should not be allowed to remain in the Island, but permitted to depart in safety.'— They made us acquainted with this Reply of the King, and were so importunate with us to go on Board, that they would by no means consent to our remaining half a Day longer in the Island. But, in fact, we were more inclined to depart, than they were to send us away, guessing what would happen. For as soon as they entered the Cave, and found it cleared of Provisions, they hastened down to the Sea-beach; and, casting huge Stones and Fragments of Rock after us, we should inevitably have been crushed with them, if the Boat had not been assisted by those in the Vessel. When we got on Board, I found my Wife and the other Women as anxious to see us, as if we had been absent many Years. We, too, experienced great Satisfaction at finding ourselves safe on

Board again ; and the Sailors having regaled themselves with the fresh Provisions, and not having been idle, we found the Sails mended, the Rigging and Tackle put into a better State, and every Thing repaired that required it.

“The Wind now appearing favourable to the Seamen, we sailed from that ‘ inaccessible Island,’ with a Stock of Provisions sufficient for a Voyage round the World. In short, (to avoid Prolixity,) at the End of a Twelvemonth, we arrived, full of Troubles, near the Straits of Gibraltar, where my worst Adventure and heaviest Misfortune befel me. For our Ship being reduced to a wretched State by the continued bad Weather and Accidents we had been exposed to, a Vessel of the Infidels came up with us ; and, in Sight of Gibraltar, began cannonading us, so that we were soon forced to surrender, after the Loss of some of our People. The first Thing the Enemy did, was to board our Ship, and

carry off my Wife and a young Page that waited on us, and some other Women belonging to the Ship: but as all this was witnessed from Gibraltar, and the Inhabitants are compassionate and brave, they hastened with all possible Readiness to our Assistance, in ten or twelve Boats, commanded by Don Juan Serrano, and Don Francisco his Brother, who cut down a valiant Chieftain (in the Style of Don Felix Arias), breaking through his iron Casque, and cleaving his Head, which caused him to fall dead into the Water;—and this saved our Lives, though it proved the Death of my poor Wife; for the Enemy perceiving what Mischief we were causing them, withdrew to their Ship, carrying the Women with them. The Turk that robbed me of Doña Mergelina, enamoured of her Beauty, attempted to use Violence towards her, and she flying from him, in my Sight, while endeavouring to seize hold of the Rigging, fell into the Sea; without receiving the least

Assistance from those vile Hereticks. Night having now set in, the People of Gibraltar, full of Pity and Charity, carried us on Shore, and provided us with excellent Lodgings, in the Houses of Don Francisco Ahumada and Mendoza, while they themselves returned, to see whether they could find Means of destroying those Enemies of the true Faith, and of the Crown of Spain. I left Gibraltar yesterday, more desirous of *Death* than of Life, though not of so lingering a Death as seems to be now intended for me."

Doctor Sagredo here closed his Narrative, performing his Wife's Obsequies with his Tears and Lamentations, while the two Men who were with us, attempted to console him, though very awkwardly, for they would have forced him to become cheerful all at once ; the common Mistake of Persons unacquainted with Human Nature. For one affords much more Consolation to an afflicted Man, by telling him, that he has

Reason to be sorrowful, than by endeavouring to persuade him that a Passion recently excited, is without Foundation. But the Attempt to force a Person in this State, to dance and sing, looks as if one thought him devoid of all Feeling and Sentiment ; and the employing such barbarous Reasoning and stupid Sort of Consolation, is like endeavouring to make a River run towards its Source. The Afflictions of those in Sorrow and Tribulation, may be alleviated by our giving them to understand, by our Manner, that we share their Grief with them, and that they have more than sufficient Cause for their Distress ; because when they find some one willing to feel for them, if they do not thereby receive all the Consolation they are capable of, at least their Affliction becomes tempered and diminished. There are two Kinds of Persons, whom I think it better never to oppose, when suffering under recently excited Afflictions ; the Chole-

rick and the Sorrowful, both of whom would rather lose than gain by the Attempt. It happened once, that a certain Judge, having finished his Supper, was seized with a strong Desire to have an honest Man flogged, and he gave Orders for Torches to be immediately lighted for the Ceremony. The People of the City becoming turbulent, and crying out against the cruel Act, he became more furious, and called for the Executioner, being resolved to put his Threats in Force, on account of the Opposition they made to it. While Things were in this State, a Gentleman of good Address approached him, and said, “ It is a very proper Thing, as your Excellency has Reason so completely on your Side, that the Sentence should be put in Execution. Pray, Sir, chastize the Fellow ; every Man of Sense is desirous that it should be so. But lest they should hereafter exhibit their Complaint to the *Residencia*, does not your Worship think it might be better to call for a

Notary, and hear what is to be said on the Subject?" The Judge was pleased with this Advice; and, by the Time he had heard the second Evidence, his Passion, and the Tumult in his Brain, had vanished. For these Passions, though they do not brook Contradiction, may be moderated.

CHAP. XXIV.

A Page interrogated—The Robbers pass Judgment on the Captives.

AS these Herdsmen, or Highwaymen, laboured under the Suspicion that I have described above, they were neither willing to release those they held confined in their Caves, nor to let them quietly pursue their Journey; lest Witnesses should be found so near at hand. For it appeared, that hitherto their Crimes had not been clearly made out.

Having found a handsome little Page very near our Cave, they seized him, and would have put him to Torture, for the purpose of making him confess, with whom he was travelling, and why he had pushed on a-head of his Companions; imagining that they had sent him forward to make his Observations;

and that his Employers were either rich People, or that they came with the Intention of doing them Mischief. The Page denying the Truth of their Suspicions, they ordered him to strip, that they might force him to confess the Truth. He then inquired, with a graceful, confident Air, which of them was the Chief of their Party? Roque Amador (which was the Name of the Captain) answered: "I am the Chief; what is your Reason for asking?" "My Motive for asking," replied the Page, "is, that, having heard an extraordinary Account of the Justice with which you govern, and that you have never been known to injure any one who tells you the Truth, I may now, with Confidence in your Character, communicate to you who I am." As these Robbers considered themselves safe in the Saucedá, they lived like Men who were never to die, giving way to all the Vices in the World; Rapine, Murder, Theft, Lasciviousness, Gambling, and

other most terrible Outrages. And as this Pasture-ground was so extensive, being sixteen Leagues from one Side to the other, and in some Parts so overgrown with Trees and Shrubs, that the Beasts which frequent it are literally at a Loss to find their Habitations; these Robbers lived without the Fear of God or Justice, acting without Order and Reason; every one following his own Will, unless it was when they united to divide the Spoils of some unfortunate Traveller; for then every Thing was arranged with great good Sense and Regularity. While this Examination of the Page was going on, a great sturdy fellow belonging to the Gang came up in his Shirt, and a loose Pair of Drawers, (after having just lost the Remainder of his Clothes at Play,) and interrupted the Discussion by vehemently cursing his Ill Luck, exclaiming: “ May he be cursed who invented Play, and he also who taught it to me. That hands which can vanquish a Bull, should not be able to gain a

single Throw ! But they all deserve to be excommunicated for throwing thirty at Dice against me, in favour of a snivelling cowardly Fellow. Is there any one here willing to take a Round at Knives with me ? Is there any Devil with his Eagle Claws, who will appear before me, and help me to kill, since he has not cared to help me to play ? Not a Shiner comes into my Hands, but it is instantly clawed out again ! In vain do I use Tricks, and avail myself of cheating, in spite of all, every thing goes wrong with me. By Jupiter, I'll play myself off to the Galleys, perhaps there I shall go to the Devil, or else have better Luck. But I always cut with my left Hand, when I get hold of the Pack, and I've sworn a thousand Times never to bet with your little drivelling Gamblers, and yet the Devil always gets me into their Company. By covering a Parcel of skinny Stakes, when I held the Bank, I wasted my Capital ; till, at last, a Chicken-hearted Fellow came in, and completely broke

me up.—What are you laughing at? Am I a Cuckold? All those lie, who laugh!”

“They laugh,” said the Captain, “at the Nonsense you have been talking. Hold your Tongue; and since you have discovered that you are unfortunate, do not play again, nor utter Blasphemies, or I will make them give you three good Blows with a Cudgel.”

“It will be much better,” replied the other, “to give me three Crowns, and let me try my Luck again, and get something to eat for my Lass, for I have played away every Thing she brought me.” A hellish Vice! The worst of all those practised by Man. For the Gamester never can be quiet; wishing, if he has lost, to recover his Losses; if he has won, to win more. This brings with it Infamy; Carelessness of Reputation; Misery to the Wife and Children; Avarice in providing the Necessaries of Life, that all the Money may be carried to the Gaming-table; and premature Old Age. And if he succeeds in gaining considerably, the only

Effect of it is, that Sharpers of his Acquaintance assemble to play at his House, where (if he once allows them to enter) he suffers from their Insolence, past all Endurance. For as the greater Part of them are Men without the least Sense of moral Duty, they allow themselves to talk with the utmost Freedom; and if he does not bear it patiently, they refuse to afford him their Assistance. But those that act in this Manner, conducting themselves like the lowest Vulgar, are mere Vagabonds; who, for the Sake of guttling at another Man's Expence, cast Honour behind their Shoulders. There is, indeed, nothing culpable in Gentlemen of Property amusing themselves during their leisure Hours in Play, after fulfilling their more important Obligations; for they may thus avoid Things of a worse, and more scandalous Nature. But for *him* who possesses but four Reals for the daily Maintenance of his Family, to squander away a hundred in Play; how is he to discharge the Debt, but

by disposing of the Clothes and Jewels of his unfortunate Wife; leaving her, and his Offspring, in a State of Beggary and Ruin; and perhaps, even, committing greater Excesses than these?—like this wretched Man, who found himself abhorred, even by those who had been the Companions of all his Crimes, Robberies, Murders, and Violence. This Gentleman having finished his Lamentations, and Night having now set in, the Examination of the Page was delayed for the present; and they carried him into an Apartment within our Cave, that he might have no Opportunity of giving Information to those whom the Robbers conceived were coming after him. We were ordered not to hold any Converse whatever with him, under Pain of Death. The poor Page remained sighing all the Night through; and if at any Time he contrived to sleep for a Minute, he soon awoke in great Distress. But we did not dare to ask him what he complained of, or what was the

Matter with him. As a Suspicion ran in the Heads of the Robbers, that nothing less than their Lives were at Stake; they concealed themselves in a Part of the Cave which was not known to us, (and such a Place, there was no difficulty in finding); besides, they were mistrustful of every Noise, and Sound, of Persons and Animals they heard on the Road. At Day-break, they visited the several Caves where they had confined their Prisoners, and coming to ours, they found it precisely in the same State as before, without our having spoken a Word to the Page, whom they called out before any one else, being desirous to extract from him the Information they wished to gain. The Page being thus called upon, replied in a graceful and impressive Manner: “ Señor Roque Amador, I inquired yesterday who was the Chief and Captain of this Band; because if it should prove to be you, I felt satisfied, from the Excellence of your Character, that I was safe. For it

would be an Achievement quite unworthy of you, to torture a poor, lonely, miserable Worm like me, and to sully your Honour by employing your Valour on that which would rather blemish than exalt your Name. If you have gained so great a Reputation, while ruling so turbulent a Set of People ; what would become of the Fame you have established all over Andalucia, should a soaring Eagle like you condescend to so humble a Prey ? It is surely more glorious to preserve the Reputation you have acquired by your Valour, than to put that in doubt which is already your own. It would be hard indeed, if *that* Justice, mingled with Truth and Mercy, on which you pride yourself, should fail only in my Instance.” We, in the Cave, paid great Attention to what was going on, listening to the Rhetorick of the Page. And Roque Amador, moved by his impressive Discourse, assured him, that no Harm should befall him, if he would speak the

Truth. For my part, I was quite confused ; as it appeared to me, that I was acquainted with the Voice, and Mode of Speaking, of the Page ; though I could not call to Mind who he was. Roque having spoken to him with so much Mildness, the Page said in return : “ Since a Degree of Compassion for my sad and solitary Situation, has been excited in your Breast, promise, I entreat you to protect my Person from all Insult, both publick and private.” To this the Rogue of a Gamester replied : “ Get away, Mr. Page, and pull off those fine Clothes of yours, for we understand nothing here of your Rhetorick or fine Language. All I know is, that we are apt to put a little cold Lead into the Bodies of those who neglect to bring Money with them.” “ If it is as heavy as yourself,” said the Page, with an Air of Pleasantry, “ the Devil will be able to digest it ; for I recollect now, having seen you, or some one very like you, stuck full of Arrows

in the Sierra Morena.”* Roque laughed, and said to him: “Attend, Beast; for the Page speaks very well. And I beg leave to tell you, young Gentleman, in the Name of myself and my Companions, that we will not only not insult you, but protect and render you all the Assistance in our Power.” “Well then,” rejoined the Page, “I shall now address myself with Confidence, as to a Person possessed of Valour, Mercy, and Sincerity.” And while we listened attentively to what was passing, the Page continued his Story thus: “If I cannot console myself with

* This alludes to a peculiar Power vested in the Holy Brotherhood, (a Society of inferior Knights, who patrolled the High-ways and Forests in search of Robbers and Smugglers, of which frequent mention is made in Don Quixote & Gil Blas,) to execute any Delinquents they apprehended, without any other judicial Interference, by shooting them to death with Arrows. This was considered a great Stigma, and as such it is employed by the Page. In Don Quixote, Chap. 22, Sancho tells his Master, who had just set the King’s Galley-slaves free, that they had better get out of the way for fear of falling into the Hands of the Holy Brotherhood; for, according to the original, he adds, “*their Arrows already buzz in my Ears.*” Tr.

knowing that I am not the first Person who has suffered from Misfortunes and Troubles, I am at least encouraged, by the Kindness so conspicuous in you, to recount the distressing Circumstances of my Life. But as Fortune takes care always to raise those who have fallen, and throw down those who have been elevated, as I am not the first who has encountered these Difficulties, and Changes of Condition, I feel Courage to speak freely. Know then, that I am not a Man, but an unfortunate Woman; who, having followed my Husband by Land and by Sea, through unspeakable Dangers to my Person and Property, and having travelled all over the known World, and a great Part that is unknown to others, after suffering Shipwreck in uninhabitable Regions; by the merciful Interposition of Providence, we at length found ourselves in the Straits of Gibraltar, where being already in Sight of the long-wished-for Land, we considered

ourselves safe ; when we were attacked by a Ship of the Infidels, our own being quite dismantled, and our Numbers greatly diminished ; our Provisions, too, so much exhausted, that in order to save them, they collected together the Women, seizing me the first, and carrying off a Page who waited on me, at the same Time ; murdering all those who defended themselves, and my Husband among the rest. The Captain of the Vessel becoming enamoured of me, endeavoured by kind Language to incline me to his Will, and induce me to abandon the Purity and Chastity I owed to my deceased Husband. I returned him no ill Language, lest he should be led to employ Force, which, in my defenceless State, I could not have resisted. I contrived, therefore, to take my Page aside, and, clothing him in my Robes, I dressed myself in his, which are these that I now wear. The Boy had a good Face ; and when he appeared again in my Clothes, the Captain thinking that it was

me, ran towards him, when the Page fled from him, and his Clothes getting entangled in the Rigging, he fell into the Sea, and immediately sinking, was never seen more. On the Loss of my Husband, followed by that of my Page, I smeared my Face, that they should continue to give Credit to what they had seen, while I should remain unknown, and unobserved. The compassionate People of Gibraltar, with the Valour which they have ever possessed, hastened to our Assistance, and were two Days and Nights attempting our Rescue, which they at length effected. And wishing to make Captives of our Enemies, when they had put us in the Boats, they cried out to them to surrender; but they preferred setting fire to their Vessel, and so went burning strait down to Hell. At Gibraltar, I learnt that my Way to Madrid lay through the Saucedá, and that, on reaching Ronda, they would put me in the proper Road." We four, and particularly Dr. Sagredo and I, were amazed at this unex-

pected Adventure, almost doubting, whether it was not a Dream, or some Delusion of Enchantment. We could neither resolve to disbelieve, nor to credit it. Roque Amador, whose Pity was excited by the Tears which the beautiful Woman shed, towards the Conclusion of her Narrative, said all he could to comfort her, offering to conduct her into the Road she wished to follow, and to give her Money for her Journey; asking her at the same Time, what her Name was, that so extraordinary a History should not remain without being properly testified. She replied, (and with Truth as before): “ My Name is Doña Mergelina de Aybar, and that of my unfortunate Spouse, (who was not a Soldier, but a Physician), Doctor Sagredo.” The Doctor, who heard his Wife mention his Name, half suffocated with Joy at the happy Change, exclaimed: “ He lives; and you shall presently find yourself in his Arms.” Roque Amador, astonished at all that was passing, directed that all those

who were in the Cave should be brought out ; and then he asked her which of those it was who had spoken. Doña Mergelina, falling back as if terrified, replied : “ If that is not some fantastick Form, produced by supernatural Causes, it is my Husband ; and the other is Marcos de Obregon, whom I considered as my Father and Counsellor in Madrid.” “ Well,” said the Captain, “ you three are at full Liberty to depart ; and although it cannot be considered as Money gained in lawful Battle, here is something to share between you, for the Expences of your Journey. Our Object in detaining all these Prisoners, has not been to do them any Injury, but for fear our Adversaries should fall in with them.” Then dismissing us, and all the rest, they requested that we would say nothing of having met them. Doña Mergelina, with Signs of sincere Gratitude, replied thus to the Leader of the Gang: “ I know no other Way in which I can shew how deeply impressed I am with a Sense of

your Kindness, than by communicating what I heard in Gibraltar, from one who wishes you well:—that the Licentiate Valladares has received Orders to bestow a great Reward, and Pardon for any Crimes he may have committed, on any one who shall deliver you into his Hands; and that great Judge received at the same Time, the necessary Proclamations, which he was ordered to publish. On hearing this, Roque called a Meeting of his Companions; and, making them a fine Oration, (which his Talents well qualified him for) they came to a Resolution, that each of them should turn the Subject over in his Mind, and decide that Night on what was best to be done for their defence. They then retired, every Man to his Cell; and while the rest were deliberating on the Part they should take, Roque Amador, like a cunning Fellow as he was, repaired hastily to Gibraltar, and embarked in a Boat for Africa; leaving them all disappointed and amazed.

CHAP. XXV.

The Squire leaves the Hermitage.

AS they now remained without Head or Government, they dispersed, and fled in various Directions ; desisting, however, from the bad Practices in which they had so long indulged. But the Judge skilfully contrived to seize about two hundred of them, of whom he made a proper Example. As for ourselves, we arrived at Madrid, without any Accident whatever ; and it appeared to me, (indeed there is no Doubt of it) that there are in that City, many Persons possessed of so much Virtue, that we should do well to imitate them.

Having now concluded my Narrative, the Hermit, after expressing great Astonishment at what he had heard, told me that I might now pass the Bridge in Safety ; weary,

perhaps, with having listened to me for so long a Time.

I therefore took my Leave, and in crossing the Bridge, beheld a great number of Trees torn up by the Roots, and brought down by the Manzanares ; several gutted Whales, of the kind the People of Madrid sally forth to kill with Lances ;* together with many

* This is a rig on the Madrileños, similar to that we have among us, of holding a halter up to a Yorkshireman, and which it would be impossible for an Englishman to understand, without Antecedents. The Poets of other parts of Spain, particularly of Estremadura and Andalusia, accustomed to behold the Majestic courses of the Tagus, Guadiana, Guadalquivir, &c. on assembling in Madrid, the usual resort of the Learned, were in the Habit of laughing at its Inhabitants, for priding themselves on such a Streamlet as the Manzanares, which is nearly dry in Summer, and in Winter is a Torrent, when the surrounding Country is overflowed, to which it serves as a Drain. Hence is the Term *humilde* (humble) always given to the Manzanares, and Poet Góngora laughs at them for building so fine a Bridge as that of Segovia, and says, that they ought to have got a River, before they built a Bridge. Another Writer in the same sarcastic Style, observes: “ *Pensabas que era el Bétis (Guadalquivir) como nuestro Manzanares, río con mal de*

drowned Animals, and crouds of Persons looking on, and, as it were, contemplating with Astonishment, the Effects of this vio-

piedra, todo arenas, por quien dixo Dn Luis de Góngora, aquel famoso Cordoves, que un jumento le orinó el invierno, y otro se le bebió el verano?" Lope de Vega, *Doro-tea*, tom. 1. pag. 52.

As a further Burlesque on the People of Madrid, who from their inland Situation, and want of Intercourse, are extremely ignorant of Sea Matters, the following Story is told, and constitutes a Joke which the Inhabitants of the other Provinces put upon them, and is what the Author here alludes to in the "*gutted Whales.*" A dreadful Storm and Inundation took place one Winter, and the Force of the Current tore away the Farms, &c. situated on the Borders of the River. The People of Madrid are said to have collected on their Bridges and Neighbouring Heights, to behold the solemn Scene of Destruction, when they were struck with the unusual Spectacle of a floating Substance of a spinal Form, which all declared must be a Monster of a Fish. A Whale! a Whale! instantly became the general Cry, and every one seized his Lance to go and kill the strange Visitor. The bravest Youths rushed into Boats, ventured into the Eddy of the Stream; but lo! when they came up with the Monster, it was no other than a Pack-saddle belonging to some *Maragato* Muleteers, on their Road up to the Capital, who Sleeping at a *Venta* on the Side of the River, in the Night, had all their Property swept

lent and unexpected Tempest. All the Gardens were flooded, and the Islands covered with small Trees, which were scattered in all Directions, nearly as far as the Hermitage of Saint Isidro Labrador; and forming, by means of the Trees and Sand, some Dams, which to this Day have divided the River into several Streams.

away by the sudden rise of the Waters. This Story has ever since remained on Record, and with it the People of the other Towns sport with those of Madrid, who in their turn, tell the People of Estremadura, they went out one Night to catch the Moon with a Net. It may not be improper to observe, that the *Maragato* Muleteers, are a peculiar race of Men following this Employment; they are Rich, and have the largest breed of Mules in Spain; hence, also, their Pack saddles are the largest, as above alluded to. They are situated in the Provinces of Leon, bordering on Galicia, and have a peculiar Dress, consisting of wide Trowsers and straight Jacket of dark brown Cloth, brown Leather Boots, and a Hat with a Brim half a yard wide. They retain nearly the same Habits from Time immemorial, live in a perfectly isolated State, and are said to be descended from Mauregatus, an ancient King of the Goths who held sway in Spain. *Tr.*

CHAPTER THE LAST;

AND

THE EPILOGUE.

The Squire, in Conclusion, moralizes on his past Life.

WEARIED by so many Accidents of Fortune, by Sea and by Land, and calling to Mind that the Days of my Youth had passed quickly away, I resolved to secure the History of my Life by printing it, and to prepare for Death, the grand Winding-up of all Human Affairs; and if this be well done, it corrects and repays us for all the Negligences of Youth. I have written it in a clear and simple Style, to avoid giving the Reader any Trouble to understand it.

It was well said by Master Valdivieso, and with his usual Clearness and Vivacity, to a Poet who valued himself on writing

obscurely, that the End of History and Poetry is to delight by instructing, and to instruct by delighting. How then, can one expect any Thing to delight, or instruct, which one finds it difficult to comprehend? If any Inadvertencies are discovered in my Book, I wish them to be attributed to my Want of Erudition, and not to any bad Intention. If any one thinks it worth his While to point out my Faults, I will receive his Correction with Humility, provided it appears that his Object is to improve me.

For he that desires to teach Patience, would act up to his own Precepts but badly, if he refuses to listen to friendly Correction. And indeed, had I not possessed this excellent Quality, I should not have been able to oppose my Breast successfully to the stormy Waves of the raging Ocean; nor have softened the hard Hearts of the Robbers; nor have brought to a happy Termination, the cruel and unceasing Horrors of

Slavery ; nor have attracted to myself the Favour of Persons of elevated Station : neither should I have enjoyed the kind Protection of Princes ; nor have controlled so many and so great Whirlwinds, as Human Weakness carries with it, unless accompanied by the Divine Virtue of Patience. And if no other Effect has been produced in me by this Undertaking, but that of freeing me from the pernicious Vice of Idleness, which I have seen so generally possess the Minds of Men of all Classes, I consider my Reward sufficient ; and that I have extracted great Fruit from my Labours. If young Men would but consider, how great a Number of Children Idleness is continually rearing, they would take Warning by the Evils of others, and not shrink from the Dangers of a Soldier's Life ; nor find themselves reduced to a miserable State of Servitude ; nor subject themselves to the Necessities endured by young Men of good Birth, who are fre-

quently induced to commit a thousand base Acts, which might have been prevented by earlier Attention. Parents who allow their Children to pass their Time in Idleness, may be pretty certain of seeing them, at one Time or another, commit some enormous Excess, which cannot be remedied until it has produced Infamy; and then, perhaps, only by wasting more Money than they can be properly said to possess.

Occupation is the great Mistress of Patience; a Virtue with whose Importance we should be constantly impressed, to enable us to resist Temptations, which assault us from within and without. In short, by means of this Virtue, we attain all those Objects within the Reach of Mankind. For, though a Man may possess great Qualities, Riches, and all earthly Blessings, still he cannot be said to *enjoy* these Advantages, without the Possession of this Virtue. And if to Patience, we add Perseverance, every

Thing desirable in Life is easily acquired
 It enables the Poor Man to pass away his
 Time in Quiet, and tends to improve his Con-
 dition; the Rich Man to preserve that which
 he has acquired, without coveting his Neigh-
 bour's Possessions; the great Nobleman
 not to be contented merely with the Blood
 he has inherited from his Ancestors, but to
 exert himself to improve it; the Prodigal to
 become more careful of what he has, or may
 possess; the Covetous and Avaricious, to be
 convinced that they were not born for them-
 selves alone; the Bold and Impetuous, to re-
 strain the Fury that leads them into Mis-
 chief; the Coward, to consider his Want of
 Courage as a Virtue; him that is suffering
 under Afflictions, to support them with
 Spirit and Meekness.

What cannot the Virtue of Patience accom-
 plish? What Turmoils of Life does it not
 vanquish? What Rewards does it not ena-
 ble us to acquire? For if a Man of Phlegma-

tick Habit can sometimes grow angry, and put the Impulse of his Passion in execution with Vehemence, what should prevent a Cholerick Man, from learning to moderate his Anger, and persevering in Acts of Patience? We have many living Examples of the Truth of this Remark, well worthy of Imitation. But by one alone, we may comprehend of what this excellent Virtue is capable. Who would have thought, that from the passionate Temper, Wealth, and Pride of Birth possessed in early Youth by the Duke of Osuna, Don Pedro Giron, would spring such admirable Virtues as are now the Astonishment of the whole World?—that having resembled a vivid Flash of Lightning in the Days of his Youth, from his ungovernable Disposition, he should have managed, by the Assistance of Patience, to subdue the Violence of his Temper, and to serve with so much Credit in Flanders; where he not only turned the Fury of the

Rebellious, but exposed his valiant Breast to their Fire, when they attempted to force, and destroy his House? What Patience, Temperance, and Justice, did he not evince in his Government of Sicily? And what Degree of Valour would have sufficed, unless accompanied by Patience, to execute his sovereign Designs?—sending forth, by Land and by Sea, such powerful Armaments, as have kept under the Preponderance of the Turks, and made all his other Enemies tremble; while he has secured the Love and Fear of the different Nations he has governed, and still governs! Don Francisco de Quevedo, a Nobleman of the most brilliant Understanding, inquiring how this great Prince had contrived, with all his Meekness, to make himself respected? he was answered, “ By Patience! which, when possessed by the lower Classes, may produce Contempt; but when found in Princes and Governours, it begets Fear, Love, and

Respect." But we must leave it to great Historians to treat of this Matter ; for it cannot find a Place in this short Discourse. George de Tovar, whom I knew in his early Years, as one possessed of Spirit and Courage sufficient to lose his Patience when an honourable Occasion presented itself; yet, by means of this same Virtue, did he attain the highest Pitch of Moral Practice, which placed him in Situations worthy of so great a Character as he has shewn himself to be ; constantly making use of Truth, Valour, and Integrity, in his Acts of distributive Justice. But there is no Limit to the Excellencies to be found in the Divine Virtue of Patience ! Oh ! Virtue derived from above ! which God has bestowed upon us in his Mercy ; and on *me*, that by imitating the Virtue of my Companions in this retreat, I may learn to secure my Life, and prepare for Death. And to enable me to put this good Design in Execution, God has given me for a Friend, that

excellent Lady, Doña Juana de Cordova, Aragon and Cardona, Duchess of Sesa; whose Christian Piety, peculiar and inherited Worth, and general Courtesy, may serve for an Example and Pattern, to every one desirous of attaining Christian Perfection. Under her Guidance, such a Son has been educated, as Don Luis Fernandez de Cordova, Duke of Sesa; a Nobleman adorned with superiour Talents, a great Taste for Literature, and a great Patron of Learning, and learned Men.

THE END.





PQ
6390
E56
V5E
V.2

THE LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
Santa Barbara

STACK COLLECTION

THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE
STAMPED BELOW.

MAR 4 1968

2 1 MAR 15 1 14 K

FEB 16 71 1 28 K

~~DM 7 1937~~
~~G~~



3 1205 00497 7078 *ly*

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



A 001 389 052 0

